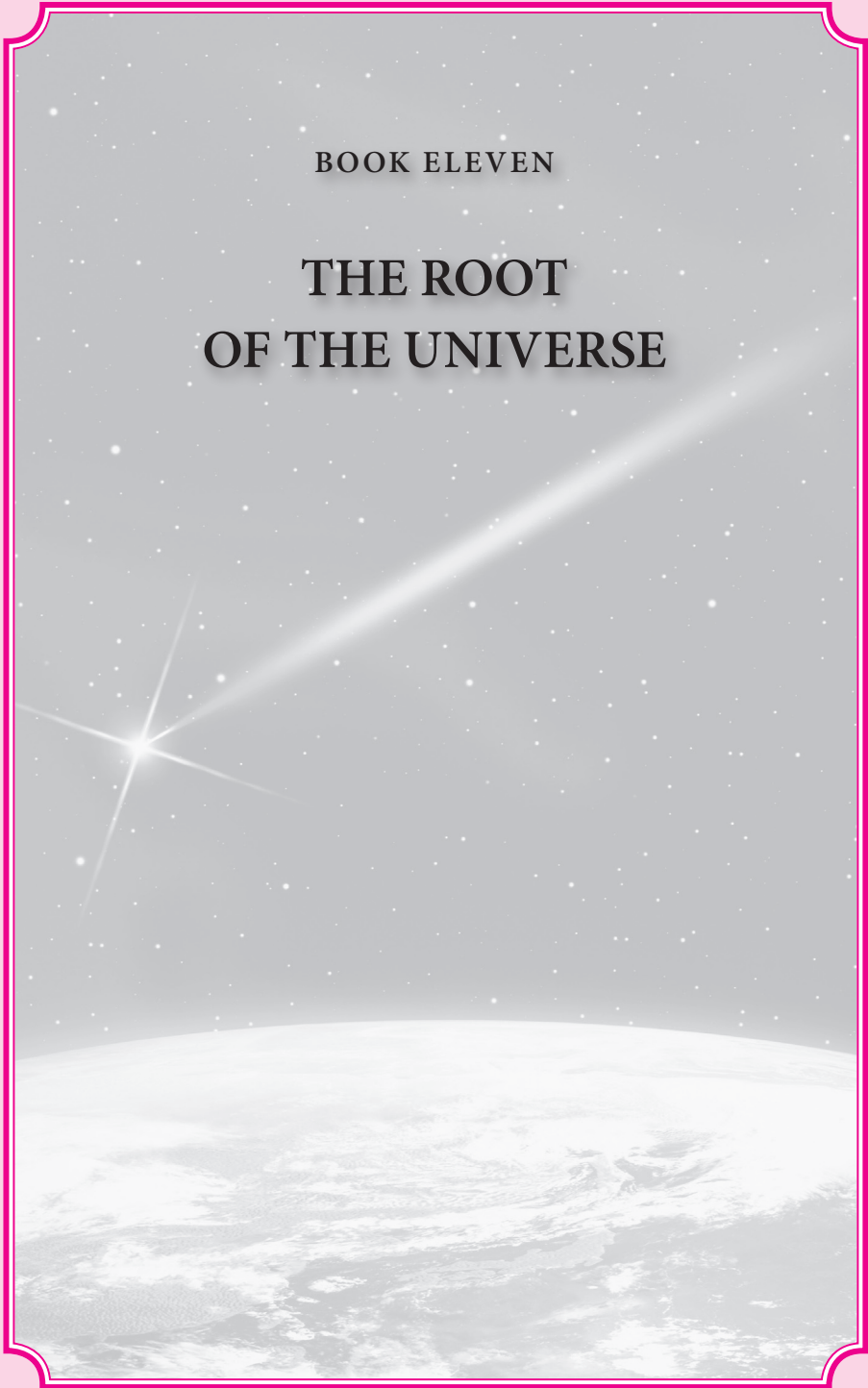


BOOK ELEVEN

THE ROOT  
OF THE UNIVERSE





# Contents

## Chapter 1. The Fundamental Order of the Universe

<b>Section 1. The Manifestation of God's Dual Characteristics</b> .....	1629
1.1. God is the Original Being having unified dual characteristics .....	1629
1.1.1. God is the Original Being of unified love .....	1629
1.2. The universe was created in the image of dual characteristics .....	1633
1.3. God's motive in creating the universe .....	1637
<b>Section 2. Subject and Object Partners Comprise the Universe</b> .....	1642
2.1. The principle of the pair system governs the existence of the universe .....	1642
2.2. Subject and object partners in a love relationship .....	1647
<b>Section 3. Love Is the Root of the Universe</b> .....	1653
3.1. The center of the universe is love .....	1653
3.2. Humankind is the center of love in the created universe .....	1659
3.2.1. Human beings are the objects of God's love .....	1659
3.2.2. The process of human maturity is reflected in God's own development .....	1660
3.2.3. Humankind is the center of all created beings .....	1663
3.3. The world of creation is a museum of love for humankind .....	1668
3.3.1. God's will in creating the universe .....	1668
3.3.2. The world of creation is the textbook of love for humankind .....	1669
<b>Section 4. Evolution or Creation?</b> .....	1675
4.1. The fundamental error of the theory of evolution .....	1675
4.1.1. Strict distinction of species and absolute rejection of intervention .....	1675
4.1.2. Laws of the action of energy and the fabrications of evolutionary theory .....	1683
4.1.3. Theory of evolution refuted by the logic of love .....	1690
4.2. The Theory of Evolution is an outdated idea .....	1694

## Chapter 2. The Creation of Humankind and the Perfection of the Ideal of Love

<b>Section 1. The Absolute Value of Love</b> .....	1699
1.1. Man and woman .....	1699
1.2. The sexual organs perfect man and woman .....	1703
1.3. The sexual organs: the beginning and the end in solving fundamental problems .....	1707
<b>Section 2. The Sexual Organs Are the Three Great Original Palaces, and the Most Holy Place</b> .....	1711
2.1. The original palace of love, life and lineage .....	1711
2.2. The organs with which to complete God's purpose of creation .....	1718
2.3. The sexual organs are the most holy place, where God dwells .....	1722
<b>Section 3. The Oneness of God and Humankind, and the Perfection of the Ideal of Love</b> .....	1725
3.1. The point of settlement of love where God and humankind meet .....	1725

3.2. Fundamental principle of the ideal oneness of God and humankind in love	1729
3.2.1. Explaining the oneness of God and humankind	1729
3.2.2. The base for the oneness of God and humankind	1733
3.2.3. The root of true lineage: God	1738
3.3. Why marriage is important	1741
3.3.1. The purpose of marriage is to resemble God	1741
3.3.2. Conjugal love and absoluteness	1745
<b>Section 4. The Sexual Organs Are the Greatest Mystery and Interest</b>	1749
4.1. The sexual organs were created with utmost diligence	1749
4.2. The owners of the sexual organs were interchanged	1750
4.3. True love can digest even the unclean	1755
4.4. Vertical and horizontal to be balanced by the sexual organs	1757
4.5. Love is not known through being taught	1761
<b>Section 5. The Sexual Organs Are the Crossroads to Heaven or Hell</b>	1763

## Chapter 3. The Human Fall and Restoration

<b>Section 1. The Internal Significance of the Fall</b>	1768
1.1. The Fall was a misuse of love	1768
1.2. The fruit of good and evil is Eve's sexual organ	1773
1.3. The devil Satan fell through fornication	1777
1.4. Humankind inherited Satan's lineage through the Fall	1782
1.5. The meaning of the serpent's temptation	1785
<b>Section 2. The Results of the Fall</b>	1787
2.1. Fallen human beings and the state of the fallen world	1787
2.1.1. Youth problems and free sex	1787
2.1.2. Corruption of sexual morality	1790
2.1.3. Homosexuality	1792
2.2. Reining in the errant culture of free sex	1795
2.2.1. In the Last Days the order of love is corrupted	1795
2.2.2. Absolute purity: do not defile the lineage	1798
2.3. True Parents and fundamental restoration	1802
2.3.1. To solve the fundamental problem, the origin of the Fall must be understood	1802
2.3.2. Why True Parents are needed	1805
2.3.3. Lineage is restored through the Blessing	1807
2.3.4. Final goal: realizing the ideal of the true family	1810

## CHAPTER ONE

# The Fundamental Order of the Universe

### Section 1. The Manifestation of God's Dual Characteristics

#### 1.1. God is the Original Being having unified dual characteristics

##### 1.1.1. God is the Original Being of unified love

If we observe the universe, it shows us that everything exists through a reciprocal relationship formed between the dual characteristics of positivity and negativity. This principle applies in every case, beginning at the level of the minerals. A molecule is formed through the fusion of positive and negative ions. In the case of plants, subsistence and reproduction depend on the union of their male and female counterparts, stamen and pistil. These dual characteristics are more pronounced in the case of animals. All animals, including fish, birds and mammals exist in male and female form. Finally, we human beings, God's greatest creation, are divided into men and women. The first man, Adam, and the first woman, Eve, are the progenitors of the human race. What is the purpose of existence of the dual characteristics of male and female? Why did God create in such a manner? (201-204, 1990.4.9)

What did God want to do by creating man and woman? He wanted to see them. Is God feminine or masculine? He is both feminine and masculine. If God were only masculine, He would only look at the woman, and Adam would have to live in the shade. It follows that the two natures of both sexes coexist within Him, so that He may find joy in looking at both woman and man. We thus conclude that God is a being in the vertical position, within whom the harmonized dual characteristics that make Him feel love towards both man and woman exist. Such is God. He needs both man and woman, and wherever He goes He is always in the position of the subject partner, that is, having subject-partner status. Thus, God combines a central subject-like masculine character, and an objective horizontal feminine character within Himself. (188-92, 1989.2.19)

Is there one God or two? There is only one God. Since there is only one of Him, how then could He enter two people at once? Would He go into each of them alternately, into the man and then out and into the woman, and so on? Furthermore, considering that there are so many people in the world, how would He enter and exit all of them? This pos-

es a problem. The Unification Church's Divine Principle teaches that God is a being having unified dual characteristics. This is the principle. God is a being who is the harmonious union of dual characteristics. This is a truly wonderful conclusion. (41-290, 1971.2.17)

God is the Subject with dual characteristics who stands in the masculine position. Then who is He like? He is like us, you and me. He is the same as we are. Accordingly, the position of subject partner presupposes that of an object partner. It contains such a meaning. It arose out of its need for that reciprocal partner. (124-83, 1983.1.30)

In a lecture on the Principle of Creation, it is simply stated, "God is the subject who incorporates dual characteristics and a harmonious union of masculinity and femininity." When we say He is the harmonious subject, what does that mean? What pleasure would He derive from having a harmonious union of masculinity and femininity in the subject position? Centering on what, should God be harmonious? God is a harmonious being centered on love. (193-153, 1989.10.3)

What does God want? What did He want to do through the creation and perfection of the ideal of creation? He wanted to fulfill love. What would God want for Himself? In terms of the Principle, He is a being with harmonized dual characteristics. He is a subject being. In summary, He is a masculine

subject being. (149-9, 1986.11.1)

What is the source of unity? What would allow God, alone as He is, to stand in the joyful position of unity? In terms of the Principle, God is the being with harmonized dual characteristics in the masculine position. We need to discern what this position signifies. The one who stands in the masculine position is the subject partner and the plus, but the plus cannot be without a minus. Considering this view, why would He be in the plus position? It would be because of love. Even the Absolute God desires to obey true love absolutely. If love is not based on the mind to submit and become one absolutely, there can be no unity, harmony, or concord. Instead, all would disperse without such a source. (195-20, 1989.11.1)

Given that human beings were created by God, what should they do? He created the object partners of His love for the purpose of His joy. Through what would He feel joy? It would be through love. Even God, the Absolute Being, requires love. Isn't that so? Existing as the Subject, yet even with His dual characteristics, He inevitably needs an object partner of His love, which is why He created everything in the universe. (223-300, 1991.11.17)

Man and woman are not enough to fulfill love. They are just two beings. Just connecting them is not enough to fulfill love. It is the love from the central position that brings them together and

moves them. Then, if we were to trace back this coming together in love of man and woman to its beginning, we would clearly see that it stems from God's dual characteristics. The union of masculinity and femininity that exists within God was developed and manifested in the reciprocal relationships of creation. Thus, God desires that the object partner of His love be better than Him. (210-317, 1990.12.27)

Let me draw the conclusion in precise terms: God is the Subject Being who possesses harmonized dual characteristics. When viewed from the right side He can appear as a man, and from the left side, a woman. Isn't that what dual characteristics signify? Since He is like that from the side, then from above He can appear as a man and from below a woman. Only then will both woman and man be satisfied and say, "Alright!" (139-56, 1986.1.26)

Unless a religious person comes forward with a logic that offers a clear scientific explanation of cause, process, and result, the religious world cannot be saved. The Divine Principle of the Unification Church has such logic as described above. The conclusion suggested by that fits everything: that God exists with dual characteristics, that He is the Subject partner and the universe is His object partner, and that therefore He is the Subject partner of love and humankind was created as the object partner of His love. This fundamental relationship continued through the

power of love which bound it to the eternal world, transcending history. This action of love continued through thousands of years, and whereas other forms of power became weaker as time passed, this power of love remained strong. (219-178, 1991.8.29)

Even God makes unity based on love. The Unification Church also has this concept, and that is how it can unify the world. This, however, is not the case with Christianity. Christianity teaches that God is an absolute and omnipotent God. He can do anything. This is wrong. Although God can do anything, according to the original principle, love is supposed to be fulfilled by two beings. Thus, it is intended for dual characteristics to be united, and love is possible only when that condition is fulfilled. (224-155, 1991.11.24)

As God is a being with harmonized dual characteristics, what would be the center of this harmonious being of duality? It would be love. Even God has based His very existence on true love. (193-303, 1989.10.8)

What is God like? As expounded in Divine Principle, He is the Subject being with dual characteristics that are harmoniously unified. The essence of that Subject being is love, an absolute love. (136-37, 1985.12.20)

How does the Divine Principle depict God? He is the Subject with dual characteristics in a union of harmony as well as

the Subject of love. The word love must be added to the description without fail. (223-160, 1991.11.10)

For God to become the harmonized being whose dual characteristics are separately represented in the form of Adam and Eve, as created by Him, around what should the harmonized being be centered? This being should be centered on love, and in the masculine position of the Subject in relation to all creation. (194-64, 1989.10.15)

Why did God create human beings? We first need to answer the fundamental question: "Why was I born?" God is the Subject of love. Doesn't the Divine Principle refer to Him as a being with a harmonious union of dual characteristics? However, it has not been disclosed until now that He is also a unified being based on love, maintaining a state of harmony. Therefore, it should be added to His description that He is the being of unity based on love. (223-268, 1991.11.12)

Where is the origin of human love and life? Doesn't it lie within God? He is the Subject Being with harmonized dual characteristics and at the same time is the source of love. It should be added in the Divine Principle that God is the source of true love. It should be clear that nobody but myself can amend the Divine Principle. (224-228, 1991.11.24)

The starting point is the question of whether God exists or not. If He does exist, what relationship does He have

with humankind? For Him to be able to relate with human beings, He must be a personal god. We have fully awakened to that fact. As a personal god, He must be like us. Just as human beings have an internal nature and an external form as part of their characteristics, God, who created them, must possess those same characteristics for the sake of their common purpose. The concept of dual characteristics arises from this. (167-243, 1987.7.21)

If God is a personal god, who would He be like? He is the combined form of Adam and Eve. God is the Subject of dual characteristics. He is not a messy combination of male and female. While being the combined form, He nevertheless occupies the position of the subject partner. The coming together in union of man and woman as object partners of their invisible subject partner God is the way for Adam and Eve as human beings to perfect His ideal of creation. (166-208, 1987.6.7)

Oriental philosophy does not have the concept of the personal God. It is ignorant of His existence. They talk of yin and yang, but such vague terms cannot sufficiently describe the personal Origin. Everything must be understood clearly from the roots. It should be the root that illustrates the characteristics of both man and woman which can explain how human beings turned out as they are today. From this perspective, the logic of dual characteristics as taught in the Unification Church is truly



a great one. (145-196, 1986.5.4)

## 1.2. The universe was created in the image of dual characteristics

Based on our understanding of God as the origin of the universe, the image of a being with the concept of subject and object partners arises. Hence, we arrive at the conclusion that the dual characteristics referred to in the Divine Principle of the Unification Church are truly great words. At the place where subject partner and object partner begin to interact with each other, existence is generated and maintained. Since the universe was created based on this origin, everything in it exists in duality and interacts through giving and receiving. (106-296, 1980.1.13)

The created world resembles God's characteristics. We understand that all created things exist as the divided forms of the dual characteristics, and that they are connected to their counterparts in the relationship of subject partner and object partner as well as the reciprocal relationships of up and down, front and rear, and left and right. What would be the purpose underlying such relationships in the environmental system? The world of creation moves with love as its purpose. (106-57, 1979.12.9)

Where do subject partner and object partner come from? There must be a basis for their existence. In the Unification we call this basis "dual characteristics." Subject partner and object partner

were not created by human beings themselves; therefore, there must be another source for this. This origin is that of dual characteristics, incorporating original internal nature and original external form. (33-36, 1970.8.2)

Energy cannot be generated without interaction between subject partner and object partner. Energy cannot generate itself; it requires subject and object elements. As an object partner, when you feel good or bad, there is always a subject partner you relate to in experiencing such emotions; hence, the term "dual characteristics" in the Divine Principle as taught in the Unification Church. (21-344, 1969.1.1)

According to Divine Principle, God is the Subject with harmonized dual characteristics. Based on what is His position as the Subject established? It is established through a relationship of love, and therefore a horizontal foundation is necessary. His desire to have a stimulating foundation in many directions led to the expansion and development of the created world. (193-217, 1989.10.4)

All seeds are made up of two halves enclosed in one outer layer. Beans, too, are divided into two halves. Since God is the origin of the universe, unless they resemble Him in form, they cannot be original seeds. (53-232, 1972.2.28)

The seed of life is always made up of two halves. This is a principle of heaven and earth. God exists as one being,

one personality, with dual characteristics, which are symbolized by the seed. Within the seed is a germ, parts of which will form the roots, the bud, and so on. In other words, within it is everything required for it to develop its existence; it is made so that, even if left to itself, it can grow into a perfected substantial form. (262-147, 1994.7.23)

Since God has dual characteristics, we human beings also have them. All forms of creation also possess dual characteristics of plus and minus. When God, humankind and all creation are brought together and connected, the number seven is attained. There are three vertical stages, and in spreading out horizontally, the four-position foundation is formed. When the numbers three and four come together in harmonious union they form the number seven. The number seven is the number of completion in the purpose of creation. (26-187, 1969.10.25)

Everything in the universe is made up of plus and minus. If we look at a molecule it shows us this. It is made up of positive and negative ions. Everything exists in reciprocal relationships. The atom contains protons and electrons. That shows the basis for the formation of the universe. In plants there is stamen and pistil; for animals, male and female, and for human beings, men and women. Everything exists reciprocally. As such, they must be brought into order within one system. Since God is the Subject, they must be brought under His control.

If a unified reciprocal realm brought about by His will for creation is not established, then He cannot derive any joy from the creation. (247-183, 1993.5.9)

The Divine Principle explanation set forth by the Unification Church, that God is the Subject who has harmonized dual characteristics, runs along the same lines as the undeniable truth drawn from results of scientific analysis. When subject and object partners are completely united, God's power will be with them eternally. Power cannot exist where there is no subject or object. Then how does God exist? He can exist eternally because within Him is the power that comes from a perpetual giving and receiving relationship between subject and object partners. (39-166, 1971.1.10)

The Principle refers to dual characteristics. Why are they necessary? Without them there can be no harmony within the creation. By virtue of their existence, they can give and receive from one another; one is like the bones and the other the flesh. By reciprocating with each other they can give rise to a new form. Since God has the original dual characteristics, His objective world must be brought into existence. In this way, dual characteristics are essential in achieving the exquisite beauty of creation. (27-340, 1970.1.1)

According to the Principle, it is universal prime energy that connects everything together. God's dual characteristics are present in all things based on

universal prime energy. This core principle is always the same. (293-11, 1998.5.1)

A feminine nature is found latent in man, and since a masculine nature is found latent in woman, there is room within her for him to live in the spirit world. As God possesses dual characteristics, He can dwell in woman as well as man. Similarly, despite their respective predominant features, husbands and wives can dwell in each other's hearts by virtue of the dual characteristics latent in them. They are one and inseparable. (256-58, 1994.3.12)

Adam is the ancestor of all males and Eve the ancestress of all females. In other words, they are the seeds of man and woman. They are two halves. Everything is made up of two halves enclosed in a single shell, symbolizing God and the universe. Within the unified God are dual characteristics, and within them the embryo, seed and nucleus. (253-249, 1994.1.30)

Since God is the incorporeal Subject, it is logical to conclude that He unquestionably needs the realm of substance – absolute corporeal beings in substance. He has dual characteristics and consequently the act of creation enabled Him to express His incorporeal internal nature in a corporeal external form. When we consider the created universe from this perspective, we can see that even the mineral kingdom is functioning through the relationship between subject and object partners. In the case

of the molecule, the positive and negative ions manifest this subject-object relationship, and similarly, protons and electrons in the case of the atom. (228-140, 1992.3.27)

The fact that God possesses both masculinity and femininity makes Him a being of dual characteristics. He brought together all the male attributes within Himself to create man, and all the female attributes to create woman. In this way, the subject and object figures were automatically separated. When these have give and take with each other, they come together in union to engage in a process – namely origin-division-union action, as stated in the Divine Principle, which will one day become a major issue in the fields of philosophy and religion. (41-290, 1971.2.17)

God created humankind in order to perfect His love and fulfill His will centered on love. (293-158, 1998.5.25)

He created human beings to become His children, resembling Him in every respect and naturally manifesting everything within Him. Thus, the dual characteristics spoken of in the Unification Church are amazing contents hitherto unheard of in this world. What is meant by the “Subject with harmoniously unified dual characteristics”? It comprises all the principles of heaven and earth. (144-236, 1986.4.25)

Even love cannot arise in isolation. It operates to raise two people to a high-

er position through their harmonious union. This is the power of love. Everything in the universe is made to harmonize with the ideal of love because love cannot operate without the bridge of couples, without pairs. You must know the fact that God had to create everything in pairs in order to actualize His ideal of love, hence the term “dual characteristics.” (177-271, 1988.5.20)

When everything in the world is taken into consideration in order to find the one fundamental principle governing the whole, it can be seen that everything is engaged in relationships of subject and object which give rise to existence and development. Simply put, existence and action are brought about by subject and object partners. The Unification Church understands the concept of dual characteristics based on this fact.

Then do the dual characteristics remain as they are? Are they at a standstill, or are they in motion? If they are in motion, why would that be? Why would they be in motion? Would it be to suffer a loss or to create something more valuable? If there were a principle which dictated that action and motion took place to incur a loss, then our actions to achieve the ideal or to advance towards our dream would be fruitless. If we were to suffer a loss through them, these actions would diminish and ultimately stop altogether. Yet if set in motion with a view to creating benefit, they would grow bigger with time. (125-72, 1983.3.13)

God is but one entity. Since He exists

as the Subject of dual characteristics, He may think He can love within His own dual characteristics. He may say, “This part of me is in the position of the male subject partner, and that part is in the position of the female object partner,” and may have some feeling of love in his mind. However, in the position of man and woman who have been separated He would not be able to feel any stimulating effect.

Thus, if God sees Adam and Eve make love passionately even without considering Him, He as the Subject of love does not feel bad about it. Why? Because He is the Subject Being, who feels joy from His object at the place where they come together as one, and the more valuable is the love felt by His object partners, the more happiness He would feel. Would not that be the first law of love based on His creation of humankind? Hence, people cannot attain such a state unless they receive an education in this love. (51-173, 1971.11.21)

Essentially, power diminishes through action, but that of love alone grows stronger with action. What is spread out infinitely has an infinitely concentrated energy within it, and so it pulls others towards it. Accordingly, it possesses an internal energy of circulatory motion. Such logic can be applied here; indeed, the logic of dual characteristics taught in the Unification Church can be applied anywhere. Through my wisdom I caught all these things. (164-87, 1987.4.26)

How wonderful is true love! God Himself was born for love. He came into existence because of love. Doesn't that make you feel good? "Well, Rev. Moon says God was born because of love!" Grab hold of Him and try analyzing Him! I analyzed God down to His dual characteristics. Are there not dual characteristics within the dual characteristics themselves? Are not both male and female hormones secreted within your bodies? If you are unsure, go to a hospital and get yourselves examined. This is why you can all relate to one another. (222-179, 1991.11.3)

After inquiring again and again why dual characteristics are part of the Principle of Creation and what the fundamental issues concerning subject and object are, there comes a point when you cannot inquire anymore and have to turn back. However much you may have delved into it, you have to turn around and go back. After this process is repeated for tens of thousands of years, you would have no choice but to resign and say, "Oh, this is the only way there is; there is no point in trying to find another," and with these words the Divine Principle would be established, which is why it is unchangeable. (173-127, 1988.2.14)

### 1.3. God's motive in creating the universe

Considering that heaven and earth did not come into existence of their own accord, but were created on the basis of a certain source of power, it logically fol-

lows that on a higher level there must be a central Subject Being who can move heaven and earth, that is to say, an original motivator with creative power. We call the being in such a position God. Since we come from different races with different languages, we use different words to name Him, but that does not matter. In any case, there must be a center of this universe. There must be a central being who remains stationary for billions of years at the center of the reciprocal world which is in motion, a being who, though everything else may be moving and in action, never moves along with them. (154-298, 1964.10.5)

In delving into the origin of the universe, the fundamental question arises: why did God come into existence? Why did He come to exist? For what reason did He come into being? What does He do? These are the questions we should be asking. The era of blind faith in Christianity has passed; gone is the era of unquestioning belief in God. After arriving at this conclusion through reasoning, we should next consider God's internal nature, His relationship with the world with regard to His will, and the relationship between His internal nature and external form, as these relationships are open to question. (191-13, 1989.6.24)

Human beings cannot be the first form of existence. No matter how great we may be, we cannot be the causal being. We will always be the second form of existence, that is, resultant

beings. Then, what would be the causal being of the universe? Since God exists, He would be the causal being as well as the Absolute Being. What would such an absolute being require for Himself? Based upon what would He seek to form relationships with humankind or the creation? This is the fundamental question, the important issue that should be dealt with in theology and philosophy. The question that needs to be asked is: what can link God and humankind, the Cause and the result? (198-283, 1990.2.5)

Why and how did God come into existence? He came into being due to love. How did the origin of the universe come to be realized? The seed of love was assimilated by God as the object partner, with the result that God Himself came to possess internal nature and external form. Based on what did this come about? It was based on love. The same holds true for you. Through the love of your mother and father, you were given the seed of life, the one cell that grew into what you are today; in a similar manner God became the being He is today. His eyes, His nose, and every feature of His were formed in this way. He is exactly the same as us. (207-27, 1990.10.21)

True love begins from the deepest place. So what is the origin of true love? It is God. The word 'God' has the same pronunciation as the Korean word pronounced 'gaht,' which means the top hat worn by the gentry in olden days. Hats are worn at the very top of oneself, so it has the same meaning as the English

word. The question remains as to how God's external form and internal nature came to be divided. Where is the origin of the universe, and how did it come into existence? This is the question we should ask: how did God come into being? Have you seen God? How did He come into existence? How did you come into existence? You are the beings who were born from the synthesis of the extracts of all the elements that make up the universe. (207-24, 1990.10.21)

What would be the center of love? It must be God. He is the unique, eternal, and unchanging being who existed before the formation of the universe. Love is the flow of heart; it is the manifestation of the internal heart flowing substantially. Hence, God's essence is heart. Such a God is the unified being who is the fundamental cause of the formation of the universe as spoken about in ontology. I do not even feel the need to mention that this formation of the universe is exactly referring to the process of God's creation.

Then how was God able to create the universe and human beings? He could do so because He has heart. Life can arise only where there is heart, and where there is life, the generative process (creation) can take place. The work of creation must have a purpose behind it, for the simple reason that by its nature, the heart always aims toward fulfillment. Therefore, it follows that the purpose of creation is to bring joy that will satisfy God's heart. This joy is derived from the creation, especially from human beings

who most closely resemble Him.

Hence, what God aimed to create were peoples and nations that resemble His love and creativity. This is plainly discernible from the fact that humankind also seeks after these same things. The universal ideal is none other than the fervent aspiration to pursue a world which should have been rightfully ours to enjoy. (65-258, 1972.11.26)

What is the origin of the universe? What was there before this universe came into being? God? Was God the only one there? Is love visible? Considering love has no substantial form, where is it? Love is a concept. Even to God, love is a concept. You need to understand that it is a concept even for Him. (293-132, 1998.5.26)

Why did God perform the work of creation? It was for the sake of love. Love cannot be fulfilled alone; it requires subject and object partners. Love in isolation, being vertical, has no effect on its surroundings. (193-303, 1989.10.8)

As the absolute Creator, what did God lack that led Him to create human beings? What did the almighty God require – He who had no need for gold or knowledge nor lacked anything – such that He needed to create human beings? In short, what is the fundamental motive for creation? It was not for power, knowledge or possession. It was because God did not have a substantial partner of love, that is, He could not fulfill love alone. Thus, the fundamental

motive behind the creation of the universe was love. (149-149, 1986.11.21)

Why did God create heaven and earth? What did that almighty, absolute being not have that He needed to create human beings? He created them because of love. Love cannot arise without an object. If it were to be set in motion without an object, it would only suffer a loss. Everything is made to protect itself; nothing moves if all that can be expected is a loss. Though it may seem like it is not there, love rushes out if an object appears. Love primarily exists within God, but when the masculine God is alone it does not make an appearance. The object that can draw it out from Him is humankind. (60-76, 1972.8.6)

What was it that the omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent God lacked which led Him to create humankind? Did He need money, gold bars or diamonds? He had plenty of them. Then, did He need knowledge? He has as much knowledge as He could wish for; after all, He is the King of knowledge. Then, was He in need of power? It would have made no difference to Him whether He had power or not. What He lacked was love.

Love can only be established in a reciprocal relationship. Without the need for love, even God is not able to form a relationship with the created world and human beings. Thus, the conclusion can be drawn that He is not able to relate with the existing world unless He approaches it with love and for this



reason, He has set love as the standard.  
(121-100, 1982.10.24)

Why did God create heaven and earth? It was due to the fact that even the Absolute Being cannot experience joy on His own. Even if He could be joyful, it would not be stimulating for Him. However much the Absolute Being might claim, "I am the Absolute Being, I am the Lord of love and life," He would not feel the stimulation of love by Himself, any more than He would feel the excitement of His existence by knowing that heaven and earth are within Him.  
(38-152, 1971.1.3)

Would God have created the universe if He only thought of Himself? The act of creation required a huge investment of energy. The wish of any artist is to create the greatest masterpiece, and he spares no pains, putting everything he has into making it. The perfect masterpiece can only be created when he has totally invested in it. A masterpiece can only be complete when there is nothing more that can be done with it. The process of creation begins and is only made possible through the input of energy. Nothing can be made without exerting energy. Taking into consideration the principle that the complete object is created from the complete input of energy, God invested everything He had as the Subject in order to create His object. Through the act of creation, He began to exist not for Himself but for His object.  
(78-111, 1975.5.6)

Creation involves the input of energy. In doing so, how much would be invested? You might think that when God created with the words, "Let there be light... Let there be a firmament..." it just seemed like child's play to Him. Yet that was not the actual case. He totally invested true life, true love and the true ideal into them. We too cannot love something created without any effort on our part or without committing our flesh and blood. (78-111, 1975.5.6)

Hence, the situation before creation was different from that which came afterward. Before creating an object, one thinks only of oneself, but as soon as you start to create love relationships, you begin to live for the sake of your object because it is then that you start to think that you exist for its sake and for the sake of your sons and daughters, and not yourself. (69-81, 1973.10.20)

In creating human beings, God wanted to allow His object of love to become greater than Himself, for which reason He continuously invested, in order to completely substantiate all His invisible elements. What this means is that the origin of true love can only be found at the point where one gives and forgets, and gives again. It is very simple. This is the fundamental principle of the existence of the universe. (203-231, 1990.6.26)

In order to possess love, one needs to repeatedly give and forget. Why should one possess such love? It is because the more love is in motion, instead of



decreasing, it increases. Scientifically speaking, any physical phenomenon diminishes the more it moves and acts, doesn't it? In the physical world, the more something engages in movement and consumes energy, the more it is depleted, but in the world of true love, the more it moves, the larger it becomes. Knowing this reality, God could begin His work of creation based on true love. (237-127, 1992.11.13)

How did the universe begin? From God's viewpoint, everything began from the principle of living for the sake of others, and fully investing, even consuming, Himself. Then what was He seeking to achieve by consuming Himself in order to create His object? What results from both subject and object partners consuming themselves, each for the sake of the other, is love. They do not mind how much they consume themselves, if they can possess love. Love is based on such a concept, and that is why God began His work of creation accordingly. He did not end up losing anything. Why would God have completely invested Himself if He knew it would result in loss? Within love, there is an energy that can more than fill everything; therefore, although God consumed and invested Himself, He received love in return. True love is something that does not diminish with investment, but instead accumulates through it. If this was not the case, and the principle maintained that true love diminishes, God Himself would have been consumed by investing Himself. It was in fact quite the opposite,

for the reality is that the more true love you put in, the more it increases. (237-124, 1992.11.13)

Inherent within love is creative ability and hence it cannot be exhausted. When you have a loving mind, however much energy you invest and consume, you still have the power of love within yourself that can more than make up for it, and so it cannot become exhausted. So, although you may find the path difficult and wearisome, you will never come to dislike it. You cannot follow such a path if you dislike it. On the path of love, you can never have a hateful mind. On the path of true love, there is never a place for a hateful mind. God's essence does not include the concept of enemies or evil because it is surrounded by true love. (237-130, 1992.11.13)

God's ideal of creation requires continuously giving out. Investment causes circulation. In the case of air, if there are areas of high and low atmospheric pressures, then between the two, a region of medium atmospheric pressure would be formed. You can stand in the medium position to give out to the low position and then be replenished from the high position. Heaven descends without being called. Thus, those who wish to give more than 100 percent will be filled up by God. Such are the laws of the universe. The process of investing completely and forgetting establishes an eternal action, and on this basis, the logic of immortality can arise.

From where else other than immor-

tality and eternal life could the principle of unification be derived? When you live for the sake of others, isn't a cycle formed? Where are you heading? As you grow lighter, you head upwards. You would ascend. If your ideal way of life were to circulate and spread out wide, then the heavenly tradition would be disseminated. God would have no choice but to automatically place both His feet on the shoulders of the ideal couple who are ascending. (205-95, 1990.7.7)

Why does God exist? For what purpose does He exist? It is for the sake of love. Thus, the Almighty God needed to create the object partner of His love. Until this time, the essential ideal of creation that the process of creation was initiated for the sake of love was unknown. The entire world of creation came into being because of love. (208-235, 1990.11.20)

God's desire is to completely give of Himself through a global foundation. He yearns for a free, peaceful and happy world wherein no one could accuse Him for giving and there would be no requirement to set conditions in receiving. His desired purpose is to establish such a world and have all humanity live happily there. (13-249, 1964.4.12)

Which comes first, love or life? Love comes first. Even though the earth originated with God, the original source of life, we do not consider life as coming first. Instead, we say that love came first. (86-79, 1976.3.7)

Although God created heaven and earth from some form of vital existence, the source and motive of that existence was love. To put it more plainly, life came into being due to love. (86-82 1976.7)

What is it that is greatest in the universe? It is God. We are to ascend to where He dwells. What will we do when we arrive there? We will make the universe ours through His love. Don't you all have some level of ambition within you? To satisfy that ambition and desire, you will need more than your knowledge, power or money. Only love will be capable of that. This is the essence of the Divine Principle and the basis of our philosophy of life. You have not understood this until now, but it is very simple. (144-132, 1986.4.12)

## Section 2. Subject and Object Partners Comprise the Universe

### 2.1. The principle of the pair system governs the existence of the universe

Everything in the universe, even in the mineral and plant kingdoms, was born with the ideal common base of the subject-object relationship centered on love. The creation represents the resultant forms of existence, and cannot come into existence without a causal being. We call that being God. Thus, in the realm of God-centered love, irrespective of direction, be it East, West, North, South, up, down, front, rear, left or right, everything, including the basic elements

and minerals exist within a pair system, a subject-object relationship, in order that they can always attain harmony and oneness. The entire creation exists through this system, including the mineral, plant, animal and human worlds. (173-35, 1988.2.1)

The creation was meant to be centered and modeled upon human beings. Everything in the universe was created to interrelate and form a connection in all directions revolving around humankind. Thus, the entire creation, that is, everything in the mineral, plant, and animal kingdoms was created in pairs. In that way, the paths of vertical and horizontal relationships are entwined. Everything in the world based upon the pair system and engaged in various kinds of existence and ways of life provides the textbook material for humankind in the process of seeking ideal love. (173-211, 1988.2.18)

All created things exist within the pair system of subject-object relationships. Why is this so? Since all created beings are in the position to develop their love to an absolute degree, they exist in a subject-object pair system in order that they can give and receive, and attain oneness through that love. There is not a single thing which was created outside this principle. Everything was born out of love. (209-89, 1990.11.27)

The subject-object relationship is an inherent feature of the universe. Everything was intended to exist in conformi-

ty to that, and accordingly we can deduce that the universe was created based on the concept of the pair system. Therefore, the conclusion can be drawn that all of creation was brought into existence in this way based upon love, and that it is sustained through love relationships. The same is true even for minerals. Positive and negative ions have give and take with each other. The plant kingdom, too, is founded on the relationship of stamen and pistil, and animals also exist based on the paired males and females of their species. (207-9, 1990.10.21)

Within the elements of the mineral world may be found pairs of positive and negative ions. The 107 chemical elements identified in the Periodic Table will not react with just anything, however hard you may try to fuse them in the laboratory. Yet with the appropriate object, there is nothing you could do – not even God – to prevent them from fusing together. You already know about this, don't you? Everything is incorporated within the pair system, whether mineral, plant or animal. All things exist in pairs, in accordance with the principle of positive and negative. (203-295, 1990.6.27)

All beings in the world come under the pair system. As they are arranged as such – whether mineral, plant or animal – in order for them to unite, they must be interconnected based on the subject-object love relationship. (189-190, 1989.4.6)

If you possess love, you will always be welcomed wherever you go. Thus, the

existence of this universe is based on love through the pair system. The mineral world exists in pairs, as do the plants and animals, don't they? Based on what? It is based on vertical love, although to varying degrees. This holds true everywhere, centering on the love that is manifested in this vast universe. The position of all beings has been determined at a particular horizontal level, and accordingly, they are able to harmonize with one another as a pair from this set position in the universe. All this came into being for the sake of love. (198-304, 1990.2.5)

The entire creation is interconnected through the structure of the pair system. This is true even for the mineral world. Everything operates either positively or negatively. Despite the earth having its own gravitational pull, we can clearly see the workings of a powerful magnet because its pull is locally stronger than that of the earth. All elements also work positively and negatively, though not strongly enough to be seen. Certain clearly determined movements occur when an electric current flows between the positive and negative poles of a circuit. What is the center of the pair system? It is the central axis which connects the two elements in a principled way, namely the axis of love. Thus, the chemical elements of the mineral world fuse together according to the laws of attraction. Elements that repel each other cannot become one, even at God's command, and even if the master of the laboratory made strenuous efforts to bring them together for thousands of

years. (197-164, 1990.1.13)

All things in the universe are unable to exist if they are separated from love. They exist within a pair system. There are males and females in the insect world too, aren't there? Sometimes you go out into the garden and dig the ground. You will find many insects there. All those creatures, though out of sight, exist as males and females, reproduce their kind and feed them. They even talk with each other by communicating through the senses, and the males and the females care for each other so much. What root cause, then, would bring this about? Don't you think there would be love in the insect kingdom? It is an absolute inevitability that the male follows the female, and vice versa. (191-220, 1989.6.25)

Even the elements in the mineral world were created in pairs. They interact together through the relationship of positive and negative ions. Thus, if this compound were to be pulled by true love, God would be pulled along with it, as would the True Parents and all of humankind, for they are all part of one interconnected system. Everything exists within the pair system. Whatever level of existence they may belong to, they nevertheless live according to the principle of love. (203-244, 1990.6.26)

Everything created by God exists within the pair system. The mineral world, too, abides by a system of pairs though at a lower level; the positive and negative ions also express their love in

their interlocking form. For the first time in history, I have come forth into the world to declare this truth. I was the first person in history to disclose that God Himself as the Origin absolutely believes in and obeys true love. This is not a mere concept, but is the irrevocable truth: God initiated creation in His quest for true love. (203-103, 1990.6.17)

Even the microorganisms, which practice their own forms of love, take pride in the fact that they were also created to play their part within the same realm of the ideal of creation, which is represented by the universal pair system. They are proud of the fact that although you are big and they are small, if they can unite with you and give you a part of themselves, they are more than willing to share themselves with you for eternity. They are different from fallen human beings. The creation of one chemical substance signifies that the plus and the minus elements have found and become one with each other. How silly human beings are by comparison! They are in fact essentially disharmonious, and this is the problem. (209-189, 1990.11.29)

Everything you see in the world exists in a pair system. We are at the head of them all. When God looks upon everything, He says, "Ah, you take after me too. When you are alone, you are lonely aren't you?" Accordingly, this universe is a natural museum replete with everything on display according to the ideal pairing system, irrespective of rank. It is a natural museum and yet, at the same

time, a museum of love. How do you think about that? Passing along the way, didn't you see the pine trees and innumerable poplars by the roadside as usual, without actually being really aware of them? When you look at them, you should be able to say, "You are like me because you also live in a love relationship of give and take between subject and object partners! Comparing myself to you, I feel ashamed because I am all alone and living a fallen life."

If such a world existed, even people who have fallen behind would have value. If humankind came to see the world more profoundly and respect it, how beautiful it would become! How lovely the world would appear to our eyes! Since God has a loving mind, He cannot but create the world as such, and therefore everything exists according to the pair system. (209-189, 1990.11.29)

Everything in this universe functions as part of a pair. Even minerals are made up of positive and negative ions. Chemical elements lacking affinity cannot combine with each other, however much scientists conduct experiments using every possible method. Yet if elements having affinity are brought together, they fuse into one however much you may try to keep them apart. Everything exists within a pair system, and so, what is the center of that? It is love. Even in the case of plants, the male and female parts pollinate to allow fertilization. In such a manner they return to their original state. Only when the two entities unite together can they reach the origi-

nal state of union before being divided. Hence, this process is called origin-division-union action. (198-112, 1990.1.25)

You need to create your own environmental realm. God created the sun, earth, air and water as part of His environmental realm. Within that realm, there must always be subject and object partners, as that is the formula for existence. All created beings exist in a pair system. This is true of the mineral, animal and human worlds. Why are they made up of subject and object partners? It is for the perfection of true love. Without a subject, love cannot be perfected. This is the formula. Up to the present day, none of our ancestors attained perfection in this manner while on earth. (293-225, 1998.5.26)

Only when male and female attain oneness can heaven and earth be harmonized. If they do not, they cannot harmonize heaven and earth or the universe, which is based on the pair system. Instead, they would be excluded from there. (226-15, 1992.2.1)

One cannot exist alone. There is no principled way that one can exist alone. Thus, everything in the world exists as pairs. Why have they been created in a pair system? It was for the sake of love. What kind of love would that be? They continue to exist because of the original love, that is, the true love in which God can take delight. (248-284, 1993.10.3)

There is not a single being in all of

creation which exists alone. All things exist in a subject-object relationship. They were all created to be part of a pair system. People today are not aware of this. The concept of absolute faith derives from the fact that the universe was created according to a pair system which came into existence for the sake of love. (298-11, 1998.12.31)

On close observation, we can see that the world is made up according to a pair system, isn't it? Within the biosphere are pairs, without exception. The subject and object partners of a pair should make a good balance; otherwise, they will slip away in all directions. When they are in complete balance, that is, when they have achieved the balanced basis upon which they can pursue love, then, for them, the world will become a completely level plane. It would be the same as if the entire universe was a vast horizontal expanse of ice. When they are completely united, this expanse of ice, instead of being sharply angular, would take the form of a sphere. The extremities of the body of ice would not take a shape that would hinder its rotational motion. By circulating in this way they are destined to become one spherical body with a multiple increase in the power of the gravitational force. (144-213, 1986.4.24)

The pair system is derived from the concept of subject and object partners; why do we need subject and object partners? They exist for the sake of love. The concept of love gives rise to subject and

object partners; because there is subject and object partners, they interact; and because they interact, energy is produced. The scientists of today have only partly worked this out, which is why their theories should all be put in order. Action takes place, but before it can, there must be a subject partner and an object partner, and before them, there must be love. In the reverse order, this is how it would be: for there to be energy, action must take place, and for action to take place, there must be subject and object partners, and prior to the subject and object partners there needs to be love. (247-119, 1993.5.1)

There is bound to be subject and object partners in every environment. Accordingly, the whole world as created by God exists within a pair system. The system is simple: the mineral, plant, animal and human worlds are all made up in pairs. What are they comprised of? Male and female. (251-120, 1993.10.17)

Action precedes force. It does not arise in isolation, but requires subject and object partners. The universe stands on the principle and formula of a pair system. Such is the conclusion. Look at how simple the world is. The mineral kingdom exists in pairs. In fact, this is the case for everything. Plants, animals and human beings work within the pair system. God Himself has dual characteristics. This is an eternal truth and formula. (299-154, 1999.2.10)

All creation was structured accord-

ing to a pair system. Thus, our organs such as the eyes, ears, nostrils, lips and hands relating to the whole creation are also in pairs, so that they can be perceived. Anything without a counterpart will be banished from the universe, the created world. (279-41, 1996.6.9)

Everything exists in the pair system of subject and object partners. The complete form for anything comes as a pair, and so everything follows that principle. Between the body and mind, which do you think is the more conscientious and closer to goodness? The mind rather than the body stands on the side of goodness; therefore, if you follow your original mind absolutely, you would reach heaven, whereas if you follow your body, all you will attain is destruction, annihilation, hell and ruin. (303-33, 1999.7.4)

## 2.2. Subject and object partners in a love relationship

The question is why this universe came into being. This is the fundamental unanswered question in the religious, academic and philosophical spheres. Human beings are the center of the universe and yet we do not even know the answer to the question of why we came to exist. In addition, the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms are connected horizontally in three stages centering on humankind, and each of these kingdoms is included in the pair system. Until now, we only had a vague idea as to why they were all created in pairs, but in precise terms all this came into being



because of love. (253-219, 1994.1.30)

What are the fundamentals of the universe? Since all creation originated from love, then, in order to find and fulfill love, there must be male and female. In the case of animals, it would be male and female; so what would it be in the case of plants? It would be pistil and stamens. In the case of the mineral kingdom, the male and female would be the positive and negative ions in a molecule. Everything exists as male and female. (273-91, 1995.10.22)

What should be done for action to take place? It requires some form of relationship. Plus coming together with another plus will yield nothing. Only when it is in a reciprocal relationship with a minus can action take place. The origin of all phenomena in the universe, rather than being an existing force, began from a certain action which then expanded to form the world of harmony, and this action could not come about with only a plus component. It begins where plus and minus have give and take, and so for there to be action, there must be subject and object partners. This is the way we understand it, and accordingly, everything has its respective object. (115-198, 1981.11.15)

Even something that is very small exists as male and female. In other words, they are made up of male and female, or plus and minus. The molecules consist of positive and negative ions; in fact, everything exists reciprocally, in a subject-

object relationship. What do you think God likes? Seeing that He created plus and minus, male and female, in order to love each other, God likes to see the fulfillment of love through them. What are the fundamentals of the universe? It is subject and object partners, male and female. (278-100, 1996.5.1)

Delving into the fundamentals of the universe, we see that everything arises from the subject-object relationship. Upon delving deeper, the question arises: why is the subject-object relationship necessary? It is so that action can take place, and action is a prerequisite for motion. That is how it works. Every existing thing in the world is in a constant state of motion. You too are in motion, aren't you? Something is flowing between you and me as the object and subject. (240-168, 1992.12.13)

Just as in the case of electricity, where the positive and negative charges collide and produce light, when subject and object partners unite, they will emit a universal light because they work in the same way as electricity. Inside this small bulb are the connections for positive and negative, but these things alone are not enough. Only when it is connected to a power plant via a substation, in other words, only when this bulb is in the resultant position and is connected to the power plant which is the origin, can it emit light continuously, and this is the simple conclusion. (73-331, 1974.10.13)

The fundamentals of the universe



follow the concept of subject and object partners rather than energy. The universal origin starts from this concept, and subject and object partners should possess their own status. There must be both a subject and an object status. The one with subject status is God, and that which has object status is humankind. Why did God create human beings? It was because, as the subject, He could not do without His object. He could only feel stimulated in the presence of an object. Stimulated by what? He would receive stimulation from truth, beauty and love, and this is precisely why He created human beings. (67-50, 1973.5.19)

The fundamental energy of the universe is produced from an action which takes a similar form to the relationships of unconditional giving and receiving in the physical world. Thus, all existing things, without exception must be involved in a subject-object relationship, for otherwise they cannot exist in this world. (48-9, 1971.8.31)

What is the concept behind the fundamentals of the universe? Even philosophers do not know where this concept came from. It comes from true love! God exists for the sake of love. He is necessary for love, and He is there because of love. Even God came into being for love. Thus, the concept of love was there, even before the universe came into being. For this concept of love to be perfected, there must be male and female, positivity and negativity. Everything in existence is in either of these two forms. (247-119, 1993.5.1)

All humankind and the creation, going right back to the origin of the universe, incorporate subject and object positions. Thus, everything was born for the sake of its counterpart. There is not one entity that does not have a subject partner and an object partner. Is this not also the case for the mineral world? Within a molecule, the positive and negative ions are in the positions of subject and object partners. With plants, it is the stamen and pistil. In the animal kingdom, it is male and female, and in the human world, man and woman. Everything needs a reciprocal relationship. (260-252, 1994.5.19)

What is the origin of the universe? From what did the universe first begin? It originated from love. Scientists believe the universe to be made up of energy. They understand that, since action takes place, energy must be there as a source of that action. If there is energy, action would already have taken place. Well then, which comes first: action or energy?

When a boy is growing up, the energy of love does not act on him. He grows through action as a male. His mind and body interact and allow him to become an adult. When he meets a woman as a fully-grown man, a horizontal energy is produced. Energy can only arise from reciprocal action. In other words, before energy can exist there must be action. Then, where does this reciprocal action originate? It comes from the subject-object relationship. Everything is governed through the relationship of

subject and object partners; for human beings this is manifested as mind and body.

In the position of object to the mind, the eyes both need to be in focus in order to see, and the nostrils, too, should be working together. Everything exists in a system of subject and object partners. (247-119, 1993.5.1)

What is the formula for re-creation? The universe is made up of plus and minus elements. If we look at the molecule it tells us as much with its positive and negative ions. Everything exists on a reciprocal basis. The atom contains protons and electrons. Everything is like that, for that is the basis upon which the universe was formed: stamen and pistil in plants, male and female in animals, and man and woman in the case of human beings. Everything functions reciprocally. As such, they must be brought into one principled order. Since God is the Subject, they must be brought under His control. Unless a unified realm of reciprocal relationships has been established within creation according to His will, there can be no joy for God through the creation. (247-183, 1993.5.9)

There are two kinds of true love, one that is vertical and the other that is horizontal, and the universe moves according to this principle. You need to understand that the universe was constituted in the same way, and the plant, animal, and mineral worlds are all involved in relationships of subject and object partners. The fact that everything resembles

the spherical shape formed by the relationship between a vertical axis and a revolving object shows that no matter what their level of existence, everything originally began with love as the model in accordance with the fundamentals of the universe. (217-96, 1991.5.4)

Look at this world and universe: in the field of minerals, there are positive and negative ions, in the plant world, stamen and pistil, and in the animal kingdom, male and female. I recently heard there are even male and female germs. Everything is supposed to become one based on love in its appropriate domain. Through observation, we can see that this world of the pair system has been created in this way, so that when the ideal love of human beings becomes representative of heaven and earth, the rest of the creation can connect to it and support it. Just as the foundation needs to be laid before a house can be built, God created everything within the pair system for the sake of humankind. You may have seen that among animals. When the male and female are roaming around together and the female is attacked, the male will protect her to the death. After giving birth to their young, they will risk their lives for them. Such is the way of love, and it is like this because it has the same characteristics as the origin. (222-123, 1991.10.28)

Before action can take place, there must first be a subject and object partners. For this reason, God Himself, who is the origin of the universe, needs to

have His internal character as the subject and His external form as the object in eternal coexistence centering on the concept of love. Only within love can there be eternal life. (209-87, 1990.11.27)

The structure of the universe was not created at random. This vast universe responds to the reciprocal subject-object relationship, carries out give and take action, and continues following the track of this eternal law. Only by keeping to this track of law can the universe exist forever. If it failed to do so, it would not be able to continue but instead would head for destruction.

Just as we can go on living only when we have properly digested the food we have eaten, and the nutrition has been properly supplied to all parts of our body through the blood vessels, so also the universe needs to be effectively replenished. It can continue to exist only through wholesome give and take.

(182-116, 1988.10.16)

Why did God create the universe? He created it for the sake of love that is the origin, which is why everything in the world of creation was made according to a pair system. There is not a single form of existence that does not come in pairs. The world is full of pairs.

What is God's ideal of creation? His ideal, based on His love, was to raise human beings as a pillar of love and have all creation live together around the base of that pillar. Human beings stand at the center of a universe which completely envelops them.

What is God's will? Taking this question into consideration, if His will were moving toward power or knowledge, it would and should meet destruction. Instead, it is heading toward love. Love is its destination. (185-165, 1989.1.8)

The question is: why would the act of giving bring you prosperity and why would your possessions grow through giving? The answer is that this would correspond with the origin at the very beginning when God created the universe. Did God create the world so as to take from it? He wants to give to it. The more you give, the greater you would grow. If the United States adopted the concept of giving in all its affairs, it would grow in influence. If you continue to just take, everything you have will become smaller. By giving, you are taking part in God's principle of creation, and then the universe can assist and support you. (183-323, 1988.11.9)

True love can only come down to the universe at a perpendicular angle, which represents the standard for measuring everything. Within the animal kingdom there are male and female. Whether they are on the left or right, positive or negative, everything in the world loves based on the vertical and horizontal according to their levels. Don't they all experience love? If there were a vertical, perpendicular line and a horizontal, level line, there where they meet would be one's place of existence. On account of this, the world is a living museum of love. Even birds risk their lives for love.

The same goes for animals, in fact, for everything, even plants and minerals. The chemical elements are made up of positive and negative ions, and engage in reciprocal actions with their appropriate counterparts. (198-360, 1990.2.11)

Where did the origin of the universe, the origin of movement begin? Even in the case of celestial bodies, the planets are relating in their movements with the sun as the center. As a result, the solar system which is formed becomes a nucleus that connects to another corresponding system, and this extended system then connects to another, and so on. Given this scenario, what would the whole universe look like? What would all the forms of existence in this vast and boundless universe look like? They would all be in movement, engaged in motions which form one spherical shape. The universe of constantly moving stars sometimes expands and at other times shrinks. That is to say, it breathes. Even the earth's land expands and contracts. Did you know that? It alternates in size, expanding and shrinking over time. (222-174, 1991.11.3)

In revolving, what would one wish to center upon through one's movement? It would be true love. This is the origin of the universe. What would happen if both man and woman only wanted to receive? If both insisted on receiving, they would have to stand with their foreheads touching, because each of them would be trying to dominate the other. All forms of existence in the uni-

verse need to give and receive. This is the principle of existence, and therefore the one who gives first becomes the subject. The person who offers first is the subject. (123-227, 1983.1.2)

Is it your body that is more important or is it your mind? It is your mind. At the center of the mind is the true mind, and this is what places the most importance on true love. As the origin of the universe is true love, people without minds of true love will be banished. In order to ensure that we will not be banished from the universe and as God is endeavoring to teach us everything, then both men and women need to train to love and practice true love through matrimonial life. By so doing, man and woman need to come together in union and become object partners of God's true love, which is the original Plus. In order to be able to fully give and receive through such a relationship, human beings need to be perfected. (123-107, 1982.12.19)

If we delve into the origin of the universe, we arrive at God. We come to know that He possesses dual characteristics of masculinity and femininity. How did the universe begin? Let us put aside our discussion of God for the moment and consider humankind. It is clear that humankind is comprised of man and woman, or subject and object partners. In the mineral kingdom, molecules are composed of anion and cation. Plants reproduce through stamen and pistil. Animals live as male and female, and human beings as man and woman.

Every man thinks his sexual organ belongs to himself, and each woman thinks her sexual organ is her own. That is why the world is perishing. Everyone is mistaken concerning ownership of the sexual organs. We all think that love is absolute, eternal and dreamlike, but when we come to clearly understand that the ownership of eternal love lies with the opposite sex, the world will not remain in its present condition. There are numerous scholars and Ph.D. holders, but none of them have thought about this. Can any of you deny this? If you ask your parents, grandparents, great-grandparents, the original ancestors and even God, who is the origin of the universe, they all will agree with this. This is a universal law. This truth will remain even after the universe continues to exist for billions of years. The natural conclusion is that when you stand before God, He will judge you as righteous or unrighteous according to this immutable law. (279-244, 1996.9.15)

All who hold onto a self-centered existence will be banished. When you look at all the things in the universe, you can see that the mineral elements exist in a relationship of subject and object partners, as do the plants through the pistil and stamen, the animal kingdom with male and female, and also in the human world. The owner of original love is not oneself but one's object, and the ones who deny their object cannot continue to exist in the world of reciprocal relationships. They would find themselves abandoned in their uselessness

and worthlessness. (280-63, 1996.11.1)

## Section 3. Love Is the Root of the Universe

### 3.1. The center of the universe is love

What is the central axis of the whole universe and spirit world? It is love. Love is the origin of life and lineage. As they came into existence through love, their motion conforms to the axis of love. Motion cannot be carried out haphazardly. It only takes place between subject and object partners, and so everything moves in their appropriate positions after forming a love relationship. The purpose of everything that moves is to continue its existence as a result of eternal love. Action cannot be carried out by oneself alone. (208-79, 1990.11.17)

The origin of the universe is love. How did God come into being? Love is the center of all existence. Therefore, the conclusion we can reach is that even the absolute God needs an ideal which He will absolutely obey. Where there is complete obedience and liberation, there will be complete happiness. (198-237, 1990.2.3)

On what would the fundamental motive for the motion of the universe be based? It would not move centered on man or woman, or even God Himself. The motive that can move God and the universe is none other than love. Therefore, love is said to be the beginning and

the end. In 1 Corinthians 13 it is written, "So faith, hope, love abide, these three; but the greatest of these is love." Why would this be so? This has never been fully explained. (185-157, 1989.1.8)

Why should we practice true love? It is because the universe originated from the principle of true love. Therefore, through this love you can form a relationship with everything in the universe. This is only logical. So in this kind of relationship, if one is positioned above, the other would be below, if one is on the right, the other would be on the left. This is how everything in the mineral, plant and animal worlds is arranged. God created a world in which everyone would desire to give as the origin had done, and therefore it can be understood that the universe is a place where everything exists in order to give to others. In this sense, everything is trying to be absorbed into a being which stands at a higher level than itself. From this viewpoint, where would the source of continuity of the universe be? All existence in the universe carries out actions, which are guided by the desire to give, based on love from a higher level. (128-291, 1983.9.11)

The principle of parental love that governs the continued existence of the universe is an environmental element that can connect to the original ideal love, along with attributes of that parental love belonging to the realm of spherical motion taking place vertically, horizontally and in all directions. Then how should you conduct yourselves before

the Parent of the universe? You should be reciprocating His love. Shouldn't you be His partner? We can draw the conclusion that in order to unite with Him, you need to become your Parent's counterpart. Only when you have become the recipient of true love can this union be achieved. Without true love there cannot be complete unity. (288-89, 1997.11.16)

God-centered people are like His body, and everything in the universe is sent to us from God with substantial forms which symbolize Him rather like shadows. All things in the universe are modeled after God Himself. Every one of them was created with Him as the original Subject; the only difference being whether they are in image or symbolic form. (153-119, 1963.11.15)

How did the universe come into existence? The answer is neither the theory of evolution nor the idea of creation. Before the concept of either creation or evolution, there were male and female. Why did male and female come into being? It was because of love. Love is the formula. (280-60, 1996.11.1)

God wants a partner of love who is better than Him. Don't you also desire your objects of love to be better than yourselves? It is the same for Him. God is the completely united form of subject and object partners, which is the origin of creation. It is for these two to become perfected as one based on love, as this brings liberation and fulfillment for God. At the place of love, the entire

world of creation will sing, dance, roll about and thus become as one. How delightful such a world would be! (276-123, 1996.2.11)

In building a house, we know that it has to be perfectly level and perpendicular. Otherwise it would tumble down. This leads us to the fundamental question of how the universe came to exist. God Himself needs love. Would He just sit on His throne in heaven and exclaim, “Oh my, I like love!”? If I were to dance alone, covered in sweat, would I not be viewed as a crazy man? I would not be quite as crazy if I danced looking at a handkerchief. I would not be considered mad if I danced and laughed looking at something that was one tenth, or even one hundredth the size of that. You need to acknowledge the fact that creation takes on the value corresponding to the absolute standard of the reciprocal value. (179-229, 1988.8.12)

After achieving full maturity, Adam and Eve would have been married by God. Then God, with His external form and internal nature, with His masculinity and femininity, would have entered their bodies. Then subsequently, the Creator would have naturally dwelt in the center of our minds, and we would have become His external form in image as His creation, in short, we would have become one as with God through love, and not by anything else, such as knowledge, power or money. By achieving this, based on true love, the external form followed by a family could emerge. True

love is crucially important. If you don't clearly know this, you won't be able to understand about the origin of the universe. (286-16, 1997.7.1)

Secular people have the notion in their heads that they will become the number one person in the world in terms of money, power or knowledge. Yet everything in the universe related to God hopes for them to become the number one practitioners of true love. You should understand that this is the path originally desired by both humankind and God. (179-33, 1988.7.3)

Don't you all claim to like love? Aren't you looking for it? The question is: what path would you take as the most direct way, the shortcut to love consistent with the fundamental formula of the universe? (184-58, 1988.11.13)

What is the origin of the universe? God is an absolute being who has power. Yet power is not the origin, any more than knowledge is. Then would it be money? As viewed from the next world, people who try to make money for themselves look like they are collecting garbage and useless things. In other words, saving money is the same as collecting waste material. People like me may have money, but I am not going to use money that has been collected like this. (191-18, 1989.6.24)

In what way did God create heaven and earth? Only human beings, and none other, can be His perfect objects.



Thus, He committed Himself 100 percent. Then why did He commit Himself so much even though He was the King of wisdom? After investing everything, He reached the position of zero, nothingness, whereas His object attained 120 percent; to explain this in terms of atmospheric pressure: where God eventually comes to stand would be a vacuum, the point of lowest pressure, and His object would be in a high pressure area. This situation would immediately create a renewed circulatory action according to the principles of automatic generation and movement. Thus, if you were to constantly invest yourself in your object, it would eventually be enveloped, wouldn't it? It would be completely surrounded. With what would you surround and envelop it? It would be with love. Since the origin of the universe is love, this is what would take place according to this principle. (196-320, 1990.1.12)

The original form of unity is expressed through individual perfection. The family, tribe, nation and world, all stem from there. This is the case regardless of how small that origin is; the angle of the perpendicular would remain the same. So with this as the central axis, if true love were to spread out in all directions from it, then no matter where it was in the universe, the whole earth would nevertheless be unified and filled with true love. Once this happens, then at any time everyone could say to each other, "Good! You are just like me!" It would be the same both spiritually in the vertical sense, and physically in the

horizontal sense wherever you went. (207-58, 1990.10.28)

Throughout their lifetime, and even when they have gone to the spiritual realm, human beings require love. They can never be separated from the concept of love, be it day or night, whether they are young, old, or have passed away, or wherever and whenever it may be. Why is this so? They cannot help being like that because that is how their origin is. Love alone can, even now, exercise creative ability. Without it, this ability cannot come into operation. Everything moves driven by a force of love that is like a powerhouse. (133-64, 1984.7.8)

God would undoubtedly be able to create love, but owning that love would be another matter because one cannot own love alone. It takes two to do that. Not even God can seek love alone. What then would be its original standard of measurement? What would be this prototype of which there is absolutely only one, that can measure all things in the universe, material world and eternal world? This is a fundamental issue. The answer is love. So it is not – and should not be – affected by the changes of the four seasons. (137-235, 1986.1.3)

Why are we created to live bound by the ties of love? Human beings are destined to live constrained by the ties of the love sought after by God and the universe through which this world can be harmonized. If this is the case, can those, who are not bound by the ties of



love and therefore have no basis of mind through which they can become happy, expect to lead happy lives? No, they cannot. Can the result be one of happiness if the basis is wrong? This is what history has been rooted in. (138-265, 1986.1.24)

When you attain the state of mind-body oneness, it would be the same as that experienced by the Buddha. It would be the state wherein you could feel, "In heaven and on earth, I alone am the honored one." When you are at the center of it, every form of energy within the sphere of love could not engage in action without passing through this center. In other words, any action that does not pass through it could not exist. Every action in the universe of creation has expanded based on this principle.

Yet the axis of love did not come into being. The nucleus did not come to exist, and not just for humankind. In expressing love between individuals, within the family, of tribes, races and nations stemming from the family, or taught by saints and sages, humankind has so far failed to comprehend and practice it according to the standards of the origin. (141-113, 1986.2.19)

When considering which comes first – life or love – with regard to the origin of the universe, we find, on delving further, that life cannot come first. Given that God is the source of life, on what foundation would He desire to live and continue to exist? What foundation would that be? He would want to exist on the foundation of peace. What estab-

lishes that foundation? Would it be life or something else? This is another question to ponder. Life could not achieve that. What can establish peace is something that transcends the orderly stages of creation, and goes beyond the highs and lows of subject and object partners – and acknowledges their common value. What would that be? It would be true love. (173-84 1988. 2.7)

You know about cell reproduction, I am sure. Even if you were to cut this off, another eye, nose or any other feature could grow back. The same is also true of hair, feet, in fact everything. Everything is like that. The cells connected to true love are of the same value as the universe. Why would true love make this so? It is because it is the cause and, at the same time, the result. It is the motive and, at the same time, the purpose. (216-288, 1991.4.14)

Love exists throughout the universe, and there is not a single being disconnected from it. Even something commonplace like a clump of grass exists based on love. Minerals come into being by way of positive and negative ions, which are all in motion for the sake of love. (289-129, 1998.1.1)

However small it may be, the realm of heart created through true love is connected to the universe, and the effects of every occurrence that takes place within it extend everywhere, even to the spirit world. This is because the cosmos, including the spirit world, exists under

God's principle of true love without any inequities. The vertical, horizontal, and front and rear relationships of true love between God and humankind are the origins of such true relationships among human beings themselves. Its perfection can only be accomplished in ideal families that have established the Four Great Realms of Heart. (260-128, 1994.5.1)

What is the essence of love? What kind of qualities does love have? What is love? Are the one-night stands and free sex which prevail in the United States today expressions of true love? That kind of behavior has no connection with original love. Then what is original true love? Love is the beginning and the end. The universe came into existence in the first place because of love. It is seeking after true love. God says of Himself in the Bible, "I am the first and the last, the beginning and the end." What does this mean? He is referring to original love in these words. (255-56, 1994.3.5)

Why should you live for the benefit of others? Why should you do so when you don't want to? You are bound by the ties of love, which are connected to all creation. Your body is bound tight with the ties of love. At this time, everything and everyone has their arms spread out wide and is asking to be tied more quickly. They want to grow rapidly and occupy the universe of love. They want to possess not just the universe of love, the object partner, but even God Himself who is the origin of love. (278-142, 1996.5.5)

Do you think God is happy all the time? Are you happy all the time? No you are not, but when you possess true love, then even sadness will be absorbed by that love. From this perspective, we can realize that the natural desire of human beings is to make the absolute authority of love stand in a position superior to anything else in the universe, no matter what individual forms of authority or knowledge, or claims to pre-eminent positions exist. Where did that come from? It came from the origin. Then where did the origin come from? It came from God's love. He also desires such love. (200-197, 1990.2.25)

In the beginning, did humankind emerge from a combative concept like communism or from a concept of harmony? Which was it? To express it in terms of electricity, let us say that the positive and negative charges are fighting each other. Where would that lead? Humanity originated from a source of harmony and unity. Therefore, through the harmony and loving union of a mother and father, you came to exist. That is undeniable. In this light we can recognize that the origin of the universe, that is to say the original nature, was first initiated from something which was harmoniously unified. (124-111, 1983.2.1)

In what way can you become someone to whom the entire universe is indebted, instead of its debtor? It will depend on your state of mind: you need to possess the mind of an owner who can say, "I'm sorry" and "Thank you," who can gaze

on the waters, the fields and mountains, the plains and rivers of Korea, and, furthermore, of the whole earth, and say “Thank you!” You must be people who can cherish gratitude toward God and nature, and live in service to them without complaint. Only people with such a mind can become true owners. (198-150, 1990.1.28)

### 3.2. Humankind is the center of love in the created universe

#### 3.2.1. Human beings are the objects of God’s love

How great is the value of humanity? We are the ones whom God, leaning on His walking stick, can yearn for after thousands of years. I have discovered the nature of the origin of the universe. The two-way relationship between God and humankind has finally led to the recognition of a worldview based on the vertical and horizontal aspects of love. As it developed into a relationship of up and down, and left and right, the worldview of vertical and horizontal love could emerge. In the center of it all dwells God. That place, which can be bound firmly in the deep valley of the mind, is the center of the vertical and horizontal aspects. If it is not tied down, the vertical and horizontal standard cannot emerge as the ideal form of love. Though there may be any number of vertical standards, the horizontal will not come into being. Thus, you must know that God had no choice but to create human beings accordingly. (48-223, 1971.9.19)

God is an absolute being with an absolute idea about creation, and so He seeks after an object of absolute value. This is something that cannot be exchanged for anything in the world. In terms of value, the relational being is a form of existence that cannot be exchanged for God Himself. The term ‘relational value’ sounds difficult to comprehend. The relational value of anything, the value of the object based on the word ‘relational,’ is so great that it cannot be exchanged for anything or anyone, not even God Himself. If God were to exchange it with Himself, He would be left alone as a result. He would be all by Himself. This is why God commits Himself and exhausts His strength, His energy. He is engaged in a war of attrition. The forms of existence thus created with relational value which cannot be exchanged even for God Himself are human beings. It becomes very clear that the form of existence with absolute value is none other than humankind. God created us as valuable beings with such an idea in mind. (68-134, 1973.7.29)

God created human beings for love. Human beings differ from others in that they were created as God’s children. We were created as the object partners who can receive direct love from Him. This is our privilege. (132-244, 1984.6.20)

Whom do human beings resemble? They resemble God. It follows that He desires love in the same way as they do. The ideal world of creation based on love signifies the manifestation of God’s love in external form on both image and

symbolic levels. The Divine Principle explains it thus. Based on what? Love. When the substantial form is happy, its image form will automatically be happy, and when the image form is happy, the symbolic form will also be happy automatically. What brings about such a phenomenon? Only love. (166-48, 1987.5.28)

It is said that, of all the things in the universe, the most precious and sacred are human beings. In simple terms, it means that out of all the creation, they are the center. Based on what are they the center? Love. Things such as knowledge, money or power are of no importance. Since God is the Creator, He can create and possess any of those things on His own at any time. However, love is something that no one can seek after or possess alone. Without exception, love appears and is fulfilled through an object partner; not even God Himself can fulfill love alone. (272-275, 1995.10.8)

For whom did God create heaven and earth? Not for Himself, but the object partner of His love. Then who is that object partner of His love? It is said that, amongst all the things of creation, the most precious and sacred is human-kind. That means that only human beings were created as His direct object of love. If we were to analyze the essential qualities of love, we would find them to include the rights of inheritance, equality and participation. That being so, if God were to experience love, even He Himself, the high, almighty and universal God, would dance to the tune of

love. (179-148, 1988.8.1)

The Unification Church teaches that even God needs love. No matter how omniscient, omnipotent, omnipresent and almighty God may be, He requires objects of His love, for love is reciprocal by its very nature. Those object partners were Adam and Eve. (121-173, 1982.10.24)

Even though God may be a great, absolute, omniscient and omnipotent being, nothing good can happen to Him when He is alone. The noun ‘happiness,’ or the adjective ‘good,’ cannot be used concerning one being in isolation. The words ‘good’ and ‘happiness’ can only have meaning where a reciprocal relationship has been established. No one claims to be happy when alone. Hence, even Almighty God Himself cannot be happy alone. For instance, let us imagine there is a musician who sings beautifully, and he is singing in solitude. Would he be happy? Of course not, he needs an audience. What is good can only come about in the process of giving and receiving. Similarly, God cannot be alone in order for Him to be able to say, “Good!” (65-20, 1972.11.13)

### 3.2.2. The process of human maturity is reflected in God’s own development

The creation of human beings shows the renewed development of God Himself in a substantial way. God can find interest and stimulation from their creation. The same is true of human beings.

Artists draw with the idea of creating masterpieces in the course of which they fully and substantially express their inner nature. They squeeze it out from deep within themselves down to their bone marrow, and invest it into their works. (225-198, 1992.1.20)

Where can human perfection be found? There is no way for a man to be perfected by himself any more than a woman by herself. This is all because they are only half-complete; they therefore can be perfected only through a complete union of love. In being perfected, whom would Adam absolutely need? He absolutely needs God vertically. To be perfected, Adam needs both vertical and horizontal connections. Without them, he could not generate the circular and spherical motion of love. For this reason, what he absolutely needs horizontally is Eve. Likewise, Eve also absolutely needs Adam. (145-319, 1986.6.1)

What did God love in Adam and Eve? The fact that Adam and Eve grew up as His son and daughter signifies that He also developed in a similar fashion. God too had times when He was like a baby, sibling, spouse and parent, and that is why He created them in this way. God is an invisible god, who developed in such fashion. He created them like this, as children, siblings and spouses. (254-274, 1994.2.15)

When God created Adam and Eve, at which stage did He create them? We cannot think for a moment that He created

them as fully-grown persons. He created them as infants. Unless we establish the logic that He created them in a similar fashion to that of a mother with a baby growing in her womb, there is no way we can explain the growing process through the order of three stages. In short, Adam and Eve had their babyhood, followed by the periods of growth and completion. This is the way of heavenly principle. (225-198, 1992.1.20)

Adam and Eve passed through babyhood, but what sort of babyhood would it have been? To answer this, we need to begin with the logic that the invisible God raised beings that were babies in His arms, the babies who came from the invisible world and passed through a process in order to become substantial beings.

Then how can a person who has been born and has grown up to full maturity advance to the position of marriage and parenthood? A child's growth shows the process of how God passed through the periods of youth, middle age, and old age, that is to say, the child shows in substantial form the invisible process of how God developed. Only when this logic is established, can the concept, "Parent and child are one body" emerge. Since one represents vertical and the other horizontal, the logic, "Vertical and horizontal are one body" can be established. (225-198, 1992.1.20)

Ideally, Adam and Eve as a loving couple giving birth to a child would be the same as standing in God's posi-

tion as the Parent, wherein His invisible Self, that is His internal nature and external form, united and lovingly created His children. The first Creator, the invisible God, created Adam and Eve as the visible second creators, and by their giving birth to children from the position of substantial second gods, they are elevated to the position of parents. Through these young children's growth, God's past history is displayed substantially, which also includes Adam and Eve's infancy, siblinghood, matrimony and parenthood. Thus, parents desire to love and be close to their children because they are their second selves. (258-240, 1994.3.20)

The position of a married couple is truly a great one. There, the fulfillment of hope that humankind has yearned for throughout history blossoms in the form of children, siblings and spouses. In this way, just as God began His work of creation with love, the couple that represents Adam and Eve will begin to create on their own through the act of giving birth to their children. They take the position of substantial creators, and in the position of horizontal creators in relation to their children, they bear them. This is the making of the third creators, namely the children.

Thus, parents raise their offspring as God's children from the position of substantial parents in His stead. In so doing, they substantially experience how the invisible God nurtured His children. God also underwent a similar developmental process. He passed through

infancy, siblinghood, matrimony and parenthood. By parents giving birth to and raising their children based on the invisible God's past, their children can gain sight of God, the first and incorporeal Creator, from the time of His invisible babyhood onward.

Adam and Eve were destined as the visible second creators to raise their children as siblings and later to have them marry to form couples, so that God, who raised Adam and Eve as His son and daughter and as brother and sister, could see through them the substantial reality of His every intrinsic and invisible desire on earth. Those who can fulfill this desire are their own sons and daughters. (263-148, 1994.8.21)

The course of the creation of Adam and Eve is that by which God as Creator substantially developed the growing process from the origin of existence through to the present time, following the intrinsic principle of creation. Then where did it begin? In the same way as the minutest cells come together to form bigger cells, fetuses pass through the ten lunar months of gestation to emerge as males or females.

Why is that so? If this were not the case, there would be no way we could explain the logic of how life is inherited. In fact, we could not even establish the logic of how heredity unfolds. Hence, there is a need for an essential invisible form and an essence of the visible form to unfold substantially, based on a relationship of oneness. To put it another way, there must be a corresponding

realm of the object partner in front of the subject partner. The internal nature has the innate capacity to unite and communicate with the external form in every fundamental respect. As a result of this, the growth process after the birth of human beings is so that the invisible, incorporeal God can see the process take place through substantial forms. As such, God cannot help but love us, since every intrinsic aspect within Himself is expressed and manifested through us in the life of our substantial selves. Given that the invisible form is transposed into visible form, everything must be invested into it. (225-198, 1992.1.20)

When God was creating an object partner through which to experience love, whom do you think He would make it look like? It would be created to resemble Himself. For that object partner to reflect God, it should have both masculine and feminine characteristics, just like Him. He created this object partner in His image, that is to say, He took every attribute from His original internal nature and manifested these thought forms – this invisible nature – in substantial form. This is how human beings came to be created. Hence, the biblical book of Genesis correctly states that God created humankind in His image. (170-167, 1987.11.15)

The original Garden is the world of happiness wherein everything can be in tune with others in its unique way, in front of the rhythm of joy created by God and humankind through their maintain-

ing mutual harmony. It is where each in its own creative way can dance and do all kinds of harmonious activities both symbolically and in image form. When this occurs, the creation will exclaim, “Aha! This is worth being born for!” Would it not be the greatest wish of even the tiniest forms of creation to become eligible to take part in the joyous feast day of love which would be held by God and humankind, and to share that joy with others? (166-46, 1987.5.28)

When you speak about truth, what do you think its core is? It isn't money, power or knowledge. It is love. Essential love stays in the vertical place, and truthful love is connected horizontally. Thus, we can know God by observing His creation, and Adam and Eve, for they were created in His image.

Why is this so? Adam and Eve are subject partners who take an object partner position in relation to God's vertical true love. Therefore, when they completely unite and create a sphere of love that covers all directions, they can form the central axis that will be connected to the entire world, as well as to God and the spirit world. (179-290, 1988.8.14)

### 3.2.3. Humankind is the center of all created beings

Who does God look like? He looks like us, both man and woman. Aren't your minds invisible? Would you like to see your mind or not? God is the same if you consider this from a spiritual perspective. He does not have a body. He



has not had one until now because Adam failed to reach perfection. He exists in a mind-like universe as a mind-like lord, teacher, custodian and parent. (197-44, 1990.1.7)

All the things of creation are the foundation upon which God's children can be created, a foundation which is related and connected to them. This includes everything from the animal kingdom down to the mineral world. Plus and minus can be found in the mineral kingdom, just as there are stamens and pistils in the plant kingdom and male and female in the animal kingdom.

The greatest masterpiece of all, created by amalgamating both spiritual and physical elements from all the rest of creation, is the human form. These forms were manifested as the internal natures and external forms of man and woman and revealed symbolically, in image form and substantially, so that they could connect with and relate to all of creation. (144-236, 1986.4.25)

It is not for the sake of money, knowledge or power that God stands in need of humankind, the center of all creation. It is for love and only love. If this was not the case and God stood in the position of desiring to be loved all on His own, there would not be anything or anyone there to love Him. If this is the conclusion, there can be no doubt that God would create an object partner in this world whom He could love. Bearing this in mind, who could be that great

and courageous object partner of His love in that world? Of all God's creatures, the only ones satisfying the conditions of being perfect object partners who can stand in front of Him are man and woman. You should thus be bold enough to be able to say, "I am the lord of the universe, the greatest in the universe." (148-308, 1986.10.26)

God created all the things of nature in order to multiply joy and perpetuate its stimulation. He did not create them just to feel happy temporarily, but rather to feel joy permeating deep into His heart every time He saw them. For this reason, He created everything with the greatest heart and devotion. After making all the things of creation over five days, then on the sixth day God created human beings with a joyful heart.

Our first ancestors, created in His image, were most beautiful, precious, pride engendering, gratifying, glorious and lovable. (9-194, 1960.5.22)

God, being omniscient and omnipotent, does not lack knowledge, ability, power or money. Then what is it He has need of? It is the one object partner that He can love. That object partner can be none other than human beings, who are the most precious and greatest of all created beings. I have said that the ones God can love most of all are human beings, but why is this so? It is because God also needs love. Love is something which cannot be experienced alone. (112-291, 1981.4.25)



God's invisible image is symbolically invested in all parts of our body. Whom do our eyes resemble? God! Hence, they are situated in the most sunken part of our face, from where they observe everything. Next, the nose symbolizes Adam and Eve and forms the center. Next, the mouth symbolizes all things of creation and is horizontal. For this reason, enclosed in it are four times eight, equal to thirty-two teeth, based on the number four which represents all of creation. Next, the ears symbolize the four directions. The features found above the neck symbolize heaven. In other words, it is the information center of heaven. (201-83, 1990.3.4)

Where is the root of your lives? It lies with the unfallen parents. Then what would be the place of the unfallen parents of goodness? Since He is the Subject with dual characteristics, God has created the entire universe and human beings in His image, manifesting in them His dual characteristics. Adam is the embodiment of God's masculine characteristics and Eve His feminine characteristics. From this perspective, though in general we usually call Him "Heavenly Father" because He is one being, nevertheless, encompassed in this concept is the notion that He is 'Heavenly Father and Mother'. (140-123, 1986.2.9)

How would things have turned out had our ancestors Adam and Eve not fallen? They would have become one in heart with God, and from the same position as Him, inherited His great work

of creation, and stood in the same place of joy with Him after creation. Such a relationship would have been formed between God and humankind. Original unfallen human beings would have become His temples. (54-64, 1972.3.11)

Even though God is our Father and we human beings His children, it still feels like the Father is above us, and that we are in a relationship in which He is superior and we are inferior. In such circumstances, what would we be thinking? We have the desire in our hearts that cries out to Him, "Father, let me have your place for just once. I want to sit in your place!" If God were to dismiss this with the words, "You scoundrel, no, I will not allow it!" then we would feel crushed. Hence, He would not answer in this way. On the contrary, He knows that people have such a desire in their hearts, and thus will encourage them with words like "Of course, by all means!" and would give up His place for us. He wants us to occupy His place, while He vacates it to enter our hearts and reside in them as His temples. (54-89, 1972.3.20)

When you have achieved mind-body oneness, the universe will protect you. When you have attained this state of being protected by the power of the universe, your parents as well as your siblings will also be protected by the universe. In short, everyone around you will be protected. Your race and nation must also form this connection. This is a wonderful conclusion. So, if you were

to go to another nation and maintained mind-body unity, then you could connect to the people of that nation also. It would work wherever you were.

In playing soccer, what happens when the ball stops rolling? It becomes one with the ground through a perpendicular. Hence, a sphere is considered to be the most ideal shape. That perpendicular could rest at any point on its surface, and this is how it is possible for the ball to roll around on any surface anywhere. So, once you have achieved mind-body oneness, and formed a perpendicular, you would fit in anywhere. Regardless of whether the person you meet is a Westerner, an Oriental, a person from the past, present or future, you would be able to relate with any situation. (205-53, 1990.7.7)

When you follow the path which your original mind leads you along, the universe will open up in unity with you. You need such experiences. Once you enter such a state, you will be able to fully relate with your original minds. You will be able to hold conversations with your minds. As soon as you think of doing something, the answer will already be right in front of you. You are advancing toward such a state. Wouldn't such people know the path they should take? The way they should follow would be definitely laid before them, and so all the power in the universe would help them to go that way. Once they face the test of faith, having been led there by the hand, everything will come to their support. Only after this, it would be possible

for them to perform great deeds. (120-313, 1982.10.20)

You may look at nature and say, "Oh, I don't need the four seasons. I only like spring; I hate summer, autumn and winter." However, if you were to ask God, He would answer, "I love all the four seasons." Hence, you need to learn to like summer, autumn and winter, even though you may have disliked them in the past. When the winter snow comes, God looks upon the world covered in white and derives pleasure from it. So you should also be saying, "Oh, I like it too!" That is the way it should be. (133-28, 1984.7.1)

You should be able to look at nature with a mind similar to that of God's. Such should be your mindset. If there is a flood or streaks of lightning, you should not say things like, "Oh, how I hate that!" God is thinking, "Ha ha, heaven and earth are kissing and making love!" He tells those who say they do not like it, "Ha ha, you good-for-nothing rascals!" (133-28, 1984.7.1)

Where would God, the King of wisdom and the Center of everything, place the origin of true love, ideal, happiness or peace between subject and object partners? In this question lies a serious issue. On the one hand there is the subject partner and its path to live for the sake of the object partner, and on the other hand vice versa; between the two paths, where should the requirements of the ideal be placed? This question inevi-

tably poses a big challenge for God, the Creator.

God had to consider, with regard to the true ideal, love and peace, whether He should set the subject partner as the center and place the ideal origin in the object partner's living for the sake of the subject partner, or set the object partner as the center and place the ideal origin in the subject partner's living for the sake of the object partner. After considering, He decided that if He were to place the ideal origin as in the case of the former, not only Himself but all people in the world would need the object partner to live for themselves. In other words, all would become subject partners and not object partners. If this were to be the case, the path to unity would be blocked. You need to know this. (75-318, 1975.1.16)

Where is the path which leads to unity and the origin of peace? God had no choice but to establish the principle that not only Himself but also all human beings need to live for the sake of others. Hence, true love, as well as the true ideal, peace and happiness, can be achieved by doing that; they cannot be found in any other case. Until now, people have not known that this is the fundamental principle of the creation of heaven and earth. (75-318, 1975.1.16)

Why were men and women born? Men were not born for men but for women, and vice versa. We were not born for ourselves. Despite this, they assert themselves. Egoism should be demolished. Once that is done, the world can

be unified. (61-265, 1972.9.1)

Those who follow the path of seeking to realize their value, not from their own viewpoint, but from that of their spouse, in other words, based on a reciprocal standard, are not unhappy people. Anywhere and anytime, their foundation of heart is within a reciprocal realm, and so they will not be lonely, but in a state of happiness. (59-200, 1972.7.16)

Harmony, enjoyment or happiness cannot come about if you are alone. Not even the Absolute Being can bring them about by Himself; He must have someone fulfilling the requirements of His partner. An absolute being needs an absolute counterpart – and an absolute subject partner an absolute object partner – for there to be happiness, harmony, joy, dancing and singing. (38-155, 1971.1.3)

Members of today's established churches boast, "The omniscient and omnipotent God is in essence the glorious Subject of all glories, the happy Subject of all happiness, and the Subject of all love and life, and so there is not a single thing that is not attributable to Him." Yet, though He may be the Absolute Being, without an absolute object partner He couldn't help but be unhappy. Even God Himself would end in failure if He could not find the one object partner which can stand in an absolute position. Without an absolute object partner, even the Absolute Being would inevitably be unhappy. That being so, in order not to end in failure, God has no

choice but to create the being that will be His partner. (38-157, 1971.1.3)

### 3.3. The world of creation is a museum of love for humankind

#### 3.3.1. God's will in creating the universe

Everything in the world was created by God as the textbook to help His beloved children attain the ideal of love. Thus, it was created with a reciprocal structure. Minerals exhibit subject-object interaction, as do protons and electrons in the case of the atom. Nothing can continue in existence without engaging in action and motion. Thus, with human beings as the center, the universe is created to reach that central point. (137-59, 1985.12.18)

God first created all the things of the universe and then the progenitors of humankind in the Garden of Eden as their lords. In creating human beings, God did not intend them to be just a source of amusement or interest for Himself. We need to understand that the amount of effort and devotion He invested into not only creating human beings but in establishing them as the center representing all creation cannot be expressed in words. (20-205, 1968.6.9)

In creating humankind, God spared no pains, devoted all His energies and poured in the essence of His being, love and affection. He created them through a connection that could not be separated

or severed by any amount of force. As He created human beings in this way, peace can rest with God as He casts His eyes upon them, and He can derive all joy and happiness only from them. (20-207, 1968.6.9)

God is the Father of humankind and we are His children. Since He poured in His bone of bones, flesh of flesh, and marrow of marrows into creating us, He could not help being drawn to us if we were to pull Him, any more than we could help being drawn to Him if He in turn pulled us. Within this bond, God created human beings to conform to the purpose of creation. If God were to compose an essay or a poem to praise human beings who had been created in this manner, that would be the greatest masterpiece which no poet or writer on earth could ever emulate. Its object would be neither God nor the creation itself, but humankind representing all creation. (20-207, 1968.6.9)

What is the universe? It symbolizes God's body, His visible body. It is His manifestation. Thus, the concept is established that we can really love it. We can wake up to the realization that we love the universe. Quite often you stroke your hair, and when something gets on your clothes, you brush it away. Why do you do so? It is because these things belong to you, they are a part of you, and so you naturally wish to take care of them. What you need to strive for from now on is to allow God to dwell in the center of your mind, become one with

your mind, your body, with all things, and achieve a unified world in this way.

(86-173, 1976.3.28)

The vastness of the universe is measured in billions of light years. Light travels at a speed of 300,000 kilometers per second, and 300,000 kilometers is approximately seven and a half times the circumference of the earth. The distance traveled by light at such a speed in a whole year is termed one light year in astronomy. The universe is so vast that light traveling at such speed will go on for billions of years and still not reach the other end. (127-213, 1983.5.8)

So far the Greenwich Observatory has discovered stars that are ten billion light years away from our world, and the era has now dawned in which stars even fifteen billion light years away can be observed, and we will soon be able to discover others even further away.

The size of this vast universe is approximately 21 billion light years. This is a Principle number. That is how big it is. For your better understanding, we will say that the distance traveled in a day by light starting out from here is a light-day, in a month a light-month, and light travels 300 million meters in a second. To cover this distance, you would have to go around the planet seven and a half times. Seven and a half! With a snap of the fingers light would have already gone round the earth seven and a half times.

Light traveling at such speed will have backaches, will not be able to think

at the end of the day, and will say, "I don't care." Consider then that it is traveling not just for one hundred light years, but tens of thousands of times that distance, 100 million light years. 100 million years would have passed by since it first set out, and during that time, one million people living consecutively to the age of one hundred would have died. Still light would not have ceased traveling.

Then how long is 21 billion light years? During that time, 210 million people living to one hundred would have died, and yet light would still be traveling. It does not go in a straight line; instead, it goes round and round. Such is the universe. (181-195, 1988.10.3)

### 3.3.2. The world of creation is the textbook of love for humankind

From the perspective of the standard of true love, Adam and Eve were to grow up observing and learning from the natural garden of love created within the pair system. They were to become aware of what they should do after they had grown up by looking at how everything was created. The creation is God's veritable museum, the museum of love for the education of Adam and Eve. They were to grow up watching how all creatures were born in pairs of male and female, even birds and butterflies, and how they developed affection for each other and brought forth their young.

Growing up and reaching full maturity, they were supposed to realize for themselves that the man is the prince of God's love representing plus and the

woman the princess of love representing minus. Then the woman would have thought to herself, "That man is the very man I need!" and learned to believe in him, just as he would have thought to himself about the woman, "She really is the woman who is essential to me!" (201-161, 1990.3.30)

From the perspective of the standard of true love, Adam and Eve were to grow up observing and learning from the natural garden of love created within the pair system. They were to grow up observing how all creatures were born in pairs of male and female, even birds and butterflies, how they developed affection for each other and brought forth their young. (201-356, 1990.4.30)

We grow from childhood to youth. Reaching adolescence, we start learning thenceforth. This is true for all of you. In your infancy, you don't know anything, and so as you grow you ask, "Mom, what is this?" or "Dad, what is that?" and in this way you get to find out and learn new things. After learning all about life in such a manner, the man then sees that everything in the world is in a pair system. He comes to realize, "Ah, the animal kingdom is in pairs, as are the insects and everything else in the world, even the flowers and minerals!" He awakens to the fact that "Yes, they are in the position of subject and object partners, they work accordingly, and as a result everything turns out in a certain way! It seems that I have to follow this path. Oh, that is not the right

one!" (219-31, 1991.8.25)

As they grow, Adam and Eve learn about the world. As these two, son and daughter, grow up, they gaze on the world and find it to be a museum of love made in the pair system. They each learn from it. "Oh! Males and females like each other so much. Even the fly exists as male and female and the butterfly too; in fact, all of them exist in pairs. They all make love and reproduce!" Do you think they would have realized this or not? (200-246, 1990.2.25)

For what purpose did God create heaven and earth in the pair system? It is the museum of love, and through this He is telling us to live more happily than the birds, the insects, indeed more happily than anything else in the world. (200-57, 1990.2.23)

Every form of creation in this world exists in the pair system, and the environment created according to that system is the ideal museum of love for humankind. Hence, interaction in the world of minerals takes place only with appropriate counterparts. Trees and plants too engage in give and take action and reproduce with their counterparts. This is also the case for birds and even grasshoppers in the insect family. Don't grasshoppers sing too? (199-309, 1990.2.21)

As God created the world in a pair system, all elements are encompassed by man and woman. What is nature? It is a museum that teaches about love so that

man and woman can love. Therefore, if a man were to sing a song longing for his beloved wife, whatever song he sang would not be considered a sin. It would be a sin if he committed the Fall. When a family breaks up due to love problems and the heavenly principles are broken, that would be a sin; what would not be a sin is when a couple love each other on the foundation of these principles and pledge to each other, “I truly love you, for ever and evermore. You are my spouse for eternity.” You should understand this clearly. (199-280, 1990.20.20)

This universe is made up within a pair system and is like a living museum created by the loving God. It is not filled with lifeless and ownerless antique souvenirs as those in the National Museum. It is filled with living souvenirs instead. (195-136, 1989.11.7)

There exists a True God, and everything created by Him is in a subject-object relationship so that they can satisfy the requirements of ideal love. Thus, every form of creation in this universe comes within the pair system. There are ‘husbands and wives’ even in minerals. Isn’t that why they attract each other? You are hearing this for the first time, are you not? Even if the laboratory researcher were to turn into a tyrant and force together two incompatible chemical elements, they would not fuse together. Even the word, “Fuse!” from God would not do any good. However, if the elements are in accord with one another, they would fuse even if command-

ed, “Do not fuse, and do not become one!” From this we can see that everything exists in the pair system because of God’s love. (177-271, 1988.5.20)

You need to realize that even minute forms of life such as insects exist in pairs based on love. The same is true of the mineral world. For what? For the sake of love. Even though they belong to a lower level of creation, they still, in their own way, reproduce through love. This universe is designed to function with its system of relationships intermeshed perfectly so as to realize God’s ideal of creation through human beings. (293-308, 1998.6.7)

As everything laid out in the Garden of Eden was part of a pair system, Adam was to look at them and realize in due course, “Ah! I am a man, a male, for I look like a male; where then is the one that is like the female?” Then he was to look around and discover, “It is Eve!” and the two were to be married in God’s presence. Then they would have remarked, “When a male and a female carry on like that, they give birth to their young!” There are many women who do not desire to get married, but nonetheless are fond of babies. (288-304, 1998.1.1)

Since everything in the Garden of Eden was created according to the pair system, Adam and Eve could see for themselves the animals mating and reproducing and would remark, “The females and males are making a loving environment together.” Adam and Eve



would have learnt about love from them and so they would have eventually felt, “We should be with each other.” While they were yet growing up, how complicated would it have been? Man is wild by nature, and so he climbed mountains and ran about, whereas the woman looked on from where she was sitting and stayed in the vicinity of their home every single day. Though different in character, they were meant to learn from the environment that surrounded them and be drawn to each other naturally. (278-280, 1996.5.26)

When Adam and Eve came to be aware that the whole world was composed of paired relationships, they were to realize that they could not live alone. Anyone can see that even deer and cows exist as male and female, and mate and reproduce. Since they saw how everything from the animal kingdom down to the insects, birds, bees, and flowers were all doing likewise, they did not need to be taught what they had already come to know. (246-58, 1993.3.23)

Each of your couples is like a brother and sister set of twins similar to Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. There, Adam had nobody other than his younger sister. She was the only daughter with no friends in the world. With only one woman and one man in the Garden of Eden, Adam had to befriend Eve. They were elder brother and younger sister.

As Adam and Eve grew up, they were to learn how everything in the pair system grows and reproduces, and when

they came to understand how the creation exists and develops, they were to awaken to the fact that they should love each other, become husband and wife, and consequently leave behind this tradition in future history. It was for the sake of future history and humanity that they were to become husband and wife.

(243-177, 1993.1.3)

Adam and Eve were born to be God’s object partners and children, yet had no elder siblings to guide them, did they? The woman was to educate herself, and the man was also to perfect himself. Educational materials for them could be found in abundance in heaven and on earth. As everything was created in the pair system, the man would look at them and learn that, “That is how we should grow!” and the woman would also gaze at them and come to know naturally, “That is how we should grow!” Nature displays plainly, like a museum, all the educational material about love, as everything in nature is in pairs. (228-268, 1992.7.5)

Reciprocity must be included in the vertical standard. There is a reciprocal partner within that standard. Yet Adam and Eve must first grow up and become fully mature. Everything in this world is created within the pair system. This is true right across the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms. The human world too, forms part of this pair system, as represented by man and woman.

The natural world is a museum of love, where the creation is made up in pairs,

though at a lower level than humankind. Then why was this museum of love created? For whom was it made? That is the question. It was made for human beings and for God. Hence, God can experience the sensation of love in everything encompassing the mineral, plant and animal worlds. (238-29, 1992.11.19)

Man and woman have to walk the path to maturity individually. The man only realizes he has to marry a woman when he sees everything in the pair system living together and giving birth to their young. With the coming of spring, he observes cows, pigs, dogs, cats, mice and even locusts doing so and exclaims, “Oh, that’s how it is! One alone isn’t enough!” He is awakened, or as we say, enlightened to this fact. So far, man and woman had only directed their attentions toward each other obliquely, but then they realize, “Ah, the one I need is Adam!” and “The one I need is Eve!” (229-321, 1992.4.13)

The environment is made up of a pair system of subject and object partners without exception. The universe is a museum with love as its nucleus, a museum of pairs. For this reason, when you see a pair of birds in love with each other building a nest, laying eggs and feeding their young, you should learn from them. You should be able to say, “I will do hundreds of times more for my children than the birds.” Even with insects, male and female mate and reproduce. They raise their young at the risk of their lives. That is education. (229-287, 1992.4.13)

As they grew to maturity, Adam and Eve were meant to see the creation around them and come to learn that Adam was to be Eve’s spouse, and she his. Adam, by nature, liked to go out and conduct himself in an extrovert fashion. He wanted to hunt and be in command wherever he went. How about Eve? Her intrinsic character was totally different from this. As they grew up in this manner, they were to learn what they ought to know as woman and man. Everything in the world is created in such a way. Aren’t the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms all created in the pair system? This is what Adam and Eve were to learn. As they grew, they perceived that everything they cast their eyes on has a reciprocal relationship with an object or subject, and that they understand this truth without being taught. (225-201, 1992.1.20)

Who teaches about love? It is nature that teaches about it. The animals running about in the garden are male and female, as are the butterflies; in short, everything exists in pairs. When the flowers bloom, then in the beautiful garden can be heard the twittering and chirruping of birds. Why do they do so? For what purpose do the male and female birds sing? Who are they trying to call? There are three reasons for the singing of birds. One is for hunger, another for love, and the last to call their young. These are the three reasons. They do so out of love. (208-251, 1990.11.20)

In order to be in the realm of reci-

procity toward perfected Adam and Eve, all creation in this universe also needs to be constructed in a similar way to them, and thus is made up within the pair system. It all exists in pairs. Adam is the great plus and the forms of creation are the little pluses spread out in all directions. For this reason, humankind and the creation are identical in the respect that they were created with reciprocal relationships. When human beings and all creation achieve balance centered on the absolute Subject, God can descend upon them vertically. (230-252, 1992.5.8)

Is it wonderful to be awakened by the twittering of the sparrows rather than on one's own? How poetic is that? What do you like better: to sing by yourself or to hear someone else sing? Isn't that poetic too? To hear birds twitter rather than to twitter yourself and to have your beloved awake you rather than to wake up by yourself; would it be ideal to wake up to various tunes of harmony? So the birds are my friends too. What makes them my friends? In view of the pair system, they can become my friends. Man and woman are also a pair. How poetic is that when you consider birds as being friends? (177-271, 1988.5.20)

Seeing everything in the world existing in pairs and reproducing themselves accordingly, Adam and Eve understand that they too should come together when they have attained full maturity. Before that time, they are not aware of it. Adam and Eve are living together all by themselves. When we consider their charac-

ters, Adam is masculine and extrovert. When he wakes up in the morning, he likes to go out to the mountains and catch rabbits, pheasants, deer, and snakes to cut their stomachs open. In order to become the future master and manage everything, he needs to know all there is to know. So he desires to find out what there is in the mountains, what animals can be found there, and what kinds of fish live in the waters. Being a man, he needs to investigate anything and everything to become their lord. (262-74, 1994.7.23)

God enjoyed Himself as He created the universe. How much fun would it have been? How interesting would it have been for Him as He created everything in the pair system, and saw that even the cells came together in pairs in their love for each other? A well-taken picture gives endless pleasure to its photographer; how much more pleasurable, then, would it be to see the real creation talk and dance with joy? (283-102, 1997.4.8)

In bringing up the man and woman He had created within His embrace, God provided for them the servant, the archangel, to protect and raise them. When they had reached full maturity, He had meant to marry them, but not before that time. In order to accomplish this, they were born separately, with the man raised as a man and the woman as a woman. After they were fully grown, they would gaze intently at the world and see that the mineral, animal and plant kingdoms were all created in the

pair system according to the ideal reciprocal relationships. They were meant to look at them and learn, “Ah! The animals all pair up, have their offspring, and live happily. Wow, the mother risks her own life to protect and nurture her young. We should do so as well!” Hence, nature is the exhibiting museum for the ideal development of Adam and Eve. (262-74, 1994.7.23)

When you enter the deepest level of the realm of true love, you can communicate even with the rocks and all the rest of creation. In the world of true love, all things would be able to communicate with one another. Why? It is because everything was created according to the pair system in order to relate to God’s love. True love is bound to resonate. When you are within the realm of true love, you would feel God’s internal and external worlds. As such, without being taught you will naturally get to know everything there is to know about the spirit world and God, and how to attend your Parents and the nation of God in your earthly life. The path of love is not meant to be trodden haphazardly. There is a formula, for there is but one path for love and no other. The path of true love to be pursued by human beings and the path of true love led by God and the heavenly world is one and the same. As He descends, we ascend the same way. Then where will we meet Him? We must meet at the place where we have attained full maturity. There is only one meeting point. Where should we meet in order to attain oneness with Him? It

is right at that spot, and no other place. That is where we should meet Him. (238-31, 1992.11.19)

After speaking a while about the theory of love, it becomes clear that everything can be explained by it. It is the highest knowledge. In coming to understand the theory of love, we have learnt that this entire world is made up of a pair system. Isn’t the mineral world made up of positive and negative ions? They are pairs. For what purpose are they paired? They were created in this way for the sake of love corresponding to their respective levels, as only then can reproduction take place.

Similarly, there are males and females in the animal kingdom, and men and women in the case of humankind. Why were they created like this? Love did not come into being just for women or just for men, but for both! This is how it should be. The wicked people that deny this proposition are the minions of hell and destruction. (221-257, 1991.10.25)

## Section 4. Evolution or Creation?

### 4.1. The fundamental error of the theory of evolution

#### 4.1.1. Strict distinction of species and absolute rejection of intervention

How far back does history go? Does it post-date or pre-date the theory of evolution? What is the theory of evolution? Sparrows and buntings are cousins.

They are the same. Their bone structure as well as every other feature is exactly alike. What differs between the two is the color of their feathers; everything else, even their sexual organs and eyes is identical. Be that as it may, if they were told to do so, would the sparrow and the bunting be able to exchange their mates with one another, make love and reproduce? Would they be able to do so even if they tried for thousands of years or not? (232-126, 1992.7.3)

Sparrows and buntings are siblings. How about that? This statement is 100 percent correct when compared to monkeys and human beings. Then if a sparrow were to mate with a bunting, would they give birth to a new kind of bird? Scholars all over the world believe that because our outward appearances and structures are similar we must have evolved. They deny the logic that everything has developed through lovemaking between male and female and their resultant reproduction. How complicated do you all think the sexual organs are? With most fish, the females and males do not come into physical contact at all. It is different on land. (199-307, 1990.2.21)

How old is the planet earth in this solar system? It has been revolving for billions of years, and yet has it ever been off-course by the merest trifle? It is right on course day after day. In the same way, all creation follows its rhythm. Would the building of nests be the same for American sparrows and Korean sparrows, or would they be different? Answer

me: same or different? They would be the same. In terms of evolutionary theory, the nest building of sparrows should develop with time, shouldn't it? If so, then how is it that they have been building their nests in the same way for thousands and tens of thousands of years? How do they know about building their nests? The swallows build their nests in their own way, as do the sparrows and the orioles. In the latter case, they build their nests on trees. (179-246, 1988.8.12)

If you were to bring together a male king orangutan and an ugly woman, marry them, and make them pray and offer devotions for thousands of years, would they ever have offspring? Would they be able to produce a baby? Give me an answer, you descendants of monkeys, communist gangsters! Do you think that offspring could be produced from the marriage of an orangutan and a woman, if the communist world were to pray and implement all kinds of force, or do you think that impossible? If you do not know, don't insist upon communism or evolutionary theory. You should all wise up to that. (262-80, 1994.7.23)

To go from the level of an amoeba to that of a monkey, gates of love for thousands of species need to be passed through upward. Evolutionary theory has ignored this fact. Would it be possible to move freely from one to the other without passing through different species? Can birds mate with insects? Can birds ascend within the animal kingdom without crossing boundaries? It

makes no sense to claim such a thing just because the bone structure is the same, and omit the fact that they need to grow through the relationship of love, the gates of love. Would interspecific mating bring forth better offspring? It would only produce inferior breeds. The problem arising here is that these people do not know about the love relationship. (254-264, 1994.2.15)

The differentiation of species is very strict. There are thousands of species between amoebae and monkeys. Each of these species brings forth their young through the gates of the females and males, which means thousands of births. The thinking that one could go from one species to another disregarding the levels of thousands of species would suggest that it could all be done within one birth, a notion that is completely wrong because it denies the fact that the gates of love need to be passed through. How can an amoeba pass through the gates of love for thousands of species and become a human being? Would similar bone structures make all the other characteristics similar too? Similar bone structures can be found everywhere. Stop saying such crazy things. (266-39, 1994.12.4)

Considering the origin of species from the viewpoint of present-day evolutionary theory, we can definitely say that a species cannot come about just like that. There must be a male and female. This is true for the mineral world as well. For a substance to be formed, the positive ion must fuse with the negative

ion. There must be positive and negative, male and female. (213-63, 1991.1.14)

Re-creation involves the creation of an environment with subject and object partners, followed by corresponding developments. This is how evolutionary theory should also develop; it cannot develop as it is. Subject and object partners must unite, be absorbed into something greater, and pass through the gates of love. According to this principle, to progress from the loveless amoeba to the human being thousands of levels need to be passed through, and these gates of love cannot be crossed just like that. (230-68, 1992.4.19)

Today's evolutionary theory states that amoeba developed and evolved into human beings. What should we think about this? In order for male and female to reach the level of humankind, they need to pass through the several thousand stages on the path of love. People are ignorant of this. The boundaries between different species are very strict. Would it be possible, then, to pass through them at a run and evolve like that? (209-29, 1990.11.25)

Is there anyone among you who would like to have some other man meddle with your wife? It is the same in the case of animals and plants. Is it common or absolute to answer no? When you say absolute, you are leaving no space for anything else. Different species are of completely different levels. The amoeba came into being through the gates of

love of male and female; how then can it be connected to and give rise to another species? Can it ascend just like that? It must pass through the gates of love. Can it ignore that system and just evolve? You Western rascals look like monkeys – and that is how they came up with evolutionary theory. That’s right; the hair on your heads and bodies is brown like a monkey’s! (216-247, 1991.4.7)

Love is absolute. It is just for the two beings and does not want the intervention of a third. From this viewpoint, the amoeba is connected to humankind through the process of love in several thousands of stages. Love is the source of continued existence. Would not everything fall to pieces if there were no love? The amoeba lives only one year, but its existence is continued in the form of its descendants through love. Would you like to have a third party intervene at the gates of love to produce a multi-colored amoeba? If a monkey and human mated, would they ever produce their young if they lived for a thousand years or not? Not even ten thousand years, let alone a thousand, will see them giving birth to offspring. So I say stop talking nonsense. (222-185, 1991.11.3)

The theory of evolution could not be justified even in the insect world, if you were to disregard the principle that the male-female relationship underwent a process of development to ever higher stages, that is, through the countless gates of love that exist between the amoeba and the monkey, and conse-

quently caused these species to be totally disconnected. You can see how even the sparrow fits into this scale of reciprocal relationships. During times like winter, they do not care about mating, and so they fool around, each of them as a different plus; however, when spring comes they build their nests and form a close relationship, that is, they become absolute. Male and female unite to absolutely drive out any third sparrow that comes their way. When another female comes, the male drives her out, and when another male comes, the female drives him out. Why? They instinctively drive out any intruder which threatens to break their respective reciprocal realm within the universal principle. (218-338, 1991.8.22)

Flowering plants all belong to their respective species and do not change themselves into a different type. They cannot change. In view of this, the distinction between species is very strict. That is why the logic of the evolutionary theory, which states that the monkey evolved from the amoeba, cannot stand. With this strict distinction between all the species, how could thousands of them connect and develop in a single system supported by them all? The evolutionary theory does not recognize the power of love. Only through the power of love does reproduction become possible. Without it, nothing could ever reproduce. How can the power of love work between amoebae and monkeys? Such a thing can never happen – not under any circumstances. (278-100, 1996.5.1)



If amoebae were to evolve into monkeys, could the former develop into the latter on its own? What would need to happen in order to pass through the many different species? Without rising to new levels of love, it would not be possible to go from one to the other. Another, greater species cannot come from something lesser. Only by passing through the countless stages of love of male and female could they reach the higher species. If, in the world of distinct species, the principled concept of plus and minus does not allow the invasion by a third party into the love relationship, then amoebae cannot climb to a higher level on their own. (237-135, 1992.11.13)

Evolution is about producing a different species, but without going through the relationship of love, there is no way another species can come into being. The distinction between species is very strict. (302-181, 1999.6.13)

Evolutionary theory must be demolished with a single blow. They are discussing it in terms of their own arbitrary theories. Calling humankind the offspring of monkeys! Those no-goods! People are meant to serve God for eternity. What on earth are they talking about monkeys for? There are forty-seven differences between monkeys and human beings. There cannot be changes in quality or species. For all that, if a monkey were to mate with a human being, would they give birth to a human or a monkey? Of course not! The origin

of species is absolute. (299-90, 1999.2.5)

Why does the universe exist according to the pair system? Naturally so, say the evolutionary theorists, and that is all well and good. What is the more familiar truth that came before evolutionary theory? Men and women have genitals, the sexual organs. Have these organs evolved? If they had, then the way of lovemaking should have changed as well. People of this present age should have a more developed way of doing so than those of the past. Even in the insect kingdom, the lovemaking should be different today from what it was in the past. The birds, too, should mate in a different way. Discussions should be held based on such factors. Are the love organs, which are the origin of life, made to develop evolutionarily? They are crazy. (191-53, 1989.6.24)

The strictness of differentiation between created species in the realm of love cannot be violated by anything in the cosmos. With the coming of spring, pairs of male and female sparrows start building nests to lay their eggs. They do not allow any third party, whether bird or other animal to meddle in their affairs. Is there any man or woman here who would like to have his or her best friend present on the night of his or her wedding day? Evolutionary theory is not true. To a woman getting married, there is no one else closer to her in this world than her mother and so she may think, "I must have her with me whether I live or die! I want to be with her no matter what

happens.” Yet that just cannot be. Even such a woman would not ask her mother on her wedding night, “Mom, please stay with me tonight.” Would there be a woman who does? The intervention of a third person is absolutely unnecessary. That is the traditional and original standard of love that should be observed by humankind. (228-154, 1992.3.27)

How complicated do you all think the sexual organs are? In terms of their structural development and shape, the sexual organs for sparrows, buntings and wagtails are identical. Well then, what would come from the mating of a sparrow and a wagtail? Is that even possible? The rascals, they are talking about things they have no knowledge of. If I were to argue with them, after exchanging a few words they would be struggling to give answers. Those scoundrels! Females and males! If we were to say that everything developed from the amoeba, how can we explain the existence of females and males, convex and concave? Why is it that all things are made in such a way that they can only reproduce by giving and receiving through these organs? Who determined that? Was it the evolutionists? They do not realize that formation of the origin of life, the internal energy, takes place through the unified foundation of male and female life forms, and is so great that it goes beyond the universal view. There are forty-seven differences between monkeys and human beings, or so I have heard. If the two were to mate, could they have offspring? When I posed this question to the com-

munists in my schooldays, none of them could give me an answer! I could go on telling you hundreds of such stories, but there is not enough time. Such nonsense is unacceptable. (198-24, 1990.1.25)

Can evolution take place based on the isotope of the structural shape? No, it cannot. Why? In the case of the amoeba, it is impossible for it to be elevated to a higher level without passing through the path of love of male and female. The bunting and the sparrow are similar in appearance, but does that mean that one evolved from the other? Their feet and beaks are identical in shape. You cannot differentiate one from the other. Be that as it may, would anything come of the mating of a female bunting and a male sparrow? What would be produced from the marriage of a white man with a female orangutan? Would they bring forth their young or would they not? Answer me, evolutionists! You need to know that developments can only come about through the sexual organs. Ponder this when you get home tonight. Do you know how complicated the sexual organs are? Within them are concentrated all neural components necessary for all types of formations of that particular species. (199-253, 1990.2.20)

People today believe that humankind evolved and developed; however, taking the amoeba as an example, they did not begin to develop with just one, for only when a male and female animal interact can development take place. The evolutionary theory is a big problem. In order

to advance from a lower class of existence to a higher one, it would be necessary to pass through all the different levels of love between male and female. In other words, one would have to pass through a great number of levels of love. You all know that a sparrow and a bunting are very similar. Their features are of slightly different hues, but other than that, their bone structure is identical. For all that, if you were to mate a sparrow with a bunting, would they reproduce? Evolutionists, give me an answer. Try mating them. They will never reproduce. Westerners have comparatively more hair, but then would the marriage of a Western man and a female gorilla produce a child? Never. (201-146, 1990.3.30)

The differentiation of species is strict; hence, we can realize that monkeys are not our ancestors as the evolutionists are claiming. One cannot develop from an amoeba into a human just like that; it would be necessary to pass through countless levels of love in innumerable stages. The law of love applies in the same way to the animal kingdom. The intervention of a third party is absolutely not permitted. However, the question remains whether one can evolve by stages. In the action of energy, the output is smaller than the input. So, if engaging in action results in a minus, how could something greater arise from it? Isn't that so? Nothing of its own ability can come together with a third entity that would allow it to develop. (212-308, 1991.1.8)

Would the amoeba like to have some-

thing else come along and involve itself in its procreative relationship? That is why one cannot deny the logic that no such connection can be made between species. Before speaking of the meaning of evolution, if the sexual organs of males and females were removed, evolutionary theory would crumble at the roots. As there were males and females before evolution occurred, the interaction of relational factors bringing about evolution could go on. (221-291, 1991.10.26)

Did the male and female organs evolve into the present state where they can harmonize with each other? This evolutionary theory is the problem. Does the connection of those organs create a path for an amoeba to come into a relationship with something on a higher level? Can it meet with anything and everything, not just horizontally but in every other way? Of course not. The world of males and females came into being based on the concept of love and is on a level completely unrelated to evolution. (222-39, 1991.10.27)

In the world of love, it is the law of nature never to permit the presence of a third party; one must be alone with one's partner. This is the case for sparrows and insects as well. Then, from the viewpoint based on evolutionary theory, how many ascending orders of love in thousands of stages are there between amoebae and human beings? Are there not thousands of species of insects? From plants to insects, there are thousands of species. Yet there are people who believe

that these thousands of species and human beings evolved from amoebae through continuous development. Not at all! Several thousands of stages of love need to be passed through. The distinction of species is very strict. What, human beings evolved from amoebae? Those impostors! (227-296, 1992.2.14)

All beings were created in pairs. What would evolutionists say if you asked them, "Why did males come into being?" They will answer, "They came into being naturally," which shows they are out of their minds. Did they come into being naturally? All males and females came into existence in order to reproduce their own species, not others. Monkeys do not become human beings, and snakes do not turn into frogs. Is that right or wrong? Evolutionists are ignorant people, who do not know that males and females relate on a specific level of love for their species. You know about males and females. Did they come to be like that for no purpose? (209-193, 1990.11.29)

In an environment, there must be subject and object partners, and they must unite and form an interactive relationship as such. Simply put, subject and object partners must build a reciprocal relationship. Thus, one cannot live alone. One's mind and body are in a relationship of subject and object partners. If the subject does not recognize the object, no connection can be made. Even in the world of chemistry, if there is no affinity between two elements, then however much they are forced to fuse together

in the laboratory, nothing will come of it. If they are compatible, they will fuse together instantaneously on contact. (291-112, 1998.3.5)

The differentiation between species is very strict. Suppose a bird that is similar in appearance to a frog goes to the world of frogs and suggests to one of them, "Will you mate with me?" Would that frog answer, "By all means!"? Wouldn't it run away or fight? Such a thing could not happen. Evolutionary theory denies the fact that it is impossible for a new species to be born without passing through the gates of love in going from the amoeba to the monkey. In other words, if what it insists is true, then the amoeba must have passed through several thousands of gates of love. Can it do that? They are completely out of their minds. That is why communism disintegrated before me. I am curious to know how they will answer the question: "What comes first, reason or being?" Does mind come first or matter? You learnt about evolutionary theory at school, didn't you? It is wrong. Evolutionary theory is wrong. Now I will start a revolution. (274-67, 1995.10.29)

Have we perceived that, in reproduction, there has been a process of development in the relational world of plus and minus, and that the concept of male and female was there before evolution was theoretically possible? Since, in terms of love, the distinction between species is strict, a third party cannot intervene. According to evolutionary theory, one must cross over the several thousand

stages from the amoeba to the monkey; however, there is no way this can be done. Given that only after passing through thousands of gates of love can that seed of development be connected, is it possible for an amoeba to give rise to a monkey? That is absolutely impossible.

(245-62, 1993.2.28)

If you acknowledge evolutionary theory, you are ignoring the fact that several thousand stages must be passed through between the amoeba and a human being. Even when you are in the same stage, you cannot just pass through. Each of these stages is connected through thousands of gates of love. Has the invasion of a third party ever been allowed in love? No, it has not. Have you ever met a bride who said, “Mother, please stay with me tonight!” on her wedding night? It is the same for the husband. Even a man who used to say, “I hate it when my father is not with me!” will not ask his father, “Father, please stay with me tonight!” on his wedding night. Love abhors the intervention of a third party. This is also true for the animal kingdom and the insect world. In view of this, there is no way that human beings or anything else but a monkey can be born from the species of monkeys. (239-231, 1992.11.25)

However much a professor researching chemistry in the laboratory commands, “Hey you, fuse this element with that one!” nothing will come of it. Elements do not fuse if their relational requirement is not satisfied. No reaction will take place because they only come

together when one can be the subject of the other. Although this is a principle of existence, in order to explain the formation of the universe, people have irresponsibly come up with the theory of evolution, which is a load of rubbish. At this point, we need to acknowledge the fact that original universal power creates the energy of interaction of all existence. (117-74, 1982.2.1)

Monkeys and human beings are different at the roots. Do monkeys lead cultural lives? Ever since the onset of life, human beings have followed religion. Do monkeys try to unite the world through culture? Do they invade and occupy other nations as their own or build national boundaries to distinguish between their nation and others? Do they or not? They are different in kind from human beings. Do monkeys glorify God? All they like to do is eat and reproduce and that is it. Human beings and monkeys are completely different. The scholars and experts asserting evolutionary theory are deceiving others in unduly persisting that monkeys evolved into people. The Unification Church should clarify that their assertions are wrong and set things to right. (41-185, 1971.2.15)

#### 4.1.2. Laws of the action of energy and the fabrications of evolutionary theory

Evolutionary theory is used to explain today's world, but in order for amoebae to reproduce species that are greater than themselves in their present state,

an extra input of energy must be added. In short, additional energy is necessary. Can the amoeba induce additional energy, all by itself, in order to develop? Does it have such ability? For it to climb a little higher and become something bigger, it needs greater energy within itself. Then, since it does not have the ability to create additional energy by itself, from where would it procure this extra energy? Can such logic be established? Whether it is Mr. Kim or Mr. Park, if a man claims, "I can knock down Muhammad Ali in a heartbeat," would he really be able to do so? In order for him to do so, he would need to acquire a greater capability compared with the inherent force he currently possesses, as there would be limits as to what he could do as he is. If Mr. Park were to claim, "When I grow stronger through mutation I will knock Ali down," do you think that is likely to ever happen? Do you? (89-73, 1976.7.11)

Taking into consideration the principle of the dissipation of energy, can input be equal to output for human beings? Energy enters the body to carry out actions; can that energy be equal to that left after the action has been carried out? Is it consumed in the process of action? Does motion consume energy? Thus, output cannot be equal to input, but is always less than before. Evolutionists imply that energy increases with action. Such a formula does not exist. If it were true, this world would be turned upside down. Hence, an external source of additional energy would be necessary. (55-254, 1972.5.9)

Evolutionists say that the amoeba evolved gradually into a higher animal, the monkey, and that the monkey evolved into the human being. Think about it. In order for a human being to exert superhuman force, he needs to have the extra energy supplemented from somewhere else. Such is the principle of energy. Energy is inevitably consumed with action. Only when extra energy is added can action be carried out anew. (38-155, 1971.1.3)

In principle, a subject and object will not interact if by doing so they will be worse off compared with before; they will only interact after they have discovered a mutual purpose that will leave them better off after the action. Considering evolutionary theory with this in mind, we can perceive that if a purpose cannot be found for the betterment of a being through evolution, development would not take place. In order for development to occur, a greater level of energy must be invested through the horizontal relationship. Otherwise, there can be no development. That energy will be of no use without a purpose and object of action. (54-11, 1972.3.9)

What is contradictory in evolutionary theory? In order for the amoeba to evolve and develop, it requires energy. It needs an external source of energy in order to grow gradually. For it to be able to say, "I will be born as a being of the stage above, as a higher being!" then something extraneous must be added there. Without additional energy input,

it cannot grow. It needs energy from outside itself. The question is, can the amoeba grow and continue to live, and, at the same time, generate enough energy for itself to become a greater being? Such a thing can never happen. (265-58, 1994.11.20)

How do developments take place in evolutionary theory? This theory is completely opposite to the principle of input and output. How can there be such a theory in the world? Is evolutionary theory not all about developing to a higher level? Does evolution mean becoming a lower form of life? According to the theory, the amoeba came into existence naturally and gradually grew larger and evolved into a monkey, which in turn evolved and developed into a human being. In this process, as described by evolutionary theory, does it grow bigger or smaller? On the other hand, the principle of energy absolutely dictates that something bigger cannot be produced from a process where input and output are equal; rather, whatever energy was originally applied would naturally become less than before as it was consumed. (37-16, 1970.12.22)

In thermodynamics, if a process occurs based on the input and output of energy, a loss must be incurred, that is, the energy level will decrease. So what I want to know is: from where does the logic arise that it will increase? The term "evolution" suggests that with the passage of time some elements are added to a being, and with that addition it becomes greater; the question is, from where did

those additional elements come? Where can you find the logic that justifies output as being greater than input? Action entails a loss, and so input must exceed output. From this perspective, the logic of evolution cannot be established. Created beings cannot take in another source of energy in this process. In the world of motion output that is greater than input can never be produced, for if it were possible, it would give rise to unlimited power.

What is the next problem? People today who believe in the theory of evolution have forgotten that everything came into being through the intercourse and interaction of plus and minus, man and woman, stamen and pistil, and positive and negative ions. There are gates of love in thousands of stages to be passed through in going from the level of an amoeba to that of a human being. However, these people think that it took nothing to go from one to the other. Nonsensical rascals! The principles relating to all species are strict: no beings permit third-party intervention. (214-193, 1991.2.2)

If the theory of evolution is to be upheld, all beings should be able to supply themselves with the energy necessary to evolve, for without extra energy, they would not have enough power within themselves to cause their nuclei to change and combine to form new features within themselves, hence the conclusion that evolution is impossible. (117-72, 1982.2.1)

A subject and its object always have



a common purpose and direction, yet what purpose and direction can there be in evolution? This principle cannot be applied to evolutionary theory. Thus, we should demolish communism through understanding this purpose and direction. Communism has tried to ravage the world with this sham theory. When the amoeba engages in action, the energy it produces will be less than the input, so how can it become something greater? How can some higher-level being come out of it? In the amoeba, the output is less than the input, and so in order for it to create something greater, a source of energy from outside would be necessary. Otherwise, the basis for evolutionary theory will collapse. Does the amoeba have the ability to take in energy from an outside source which would lead to qualitative changes? Those ridiculous good-for-nothings! (210-155, 1990.12.18)

Speaking of the theory of evolution, do you think it is possible for an evolving amoeba on its own to create a new resource which would be the starting point of evolution? Action and motion take place around three points, plus, minus and a new source of energy, then another point, the fourth base, the evolved being, needs to emerge to complete the circle. The one in action must go from the third point to the fourth, that is, it must interact and move in a circle. Yet can the amoeba have enough energy to go around 360 degrees and return to its original position on a new level? It cannot.

Then who has invested the energy for

this third point? Logically speaking, this means that energy from another source must be added there. So, what direction should evolution take? Who determines this direction? The evolving amoeba cannot set a direction for itself. In view of this, that which has been termed as mutation is the raving of lunatics. Who would listen to it? Nowadays, the theory of evolution is an obsolete phrase, rotten to the core and lying in the dustbin where it belongs. I should say: it is the thinking of the cesspit. (209-187, 1990.11.29)

Today's physics has advanced to a point where it is asserting dualism, that all atoms have awareness. This logic is similar in essence to the Unification Church's principle of dual characteristics. Albeit on different levels, all creation has comprehension. Is that not true? Only on this basis can such things like germs go on existing. Do you think so? Would those germs, invisible to the naked eye and several thousandths of a millimeter in size, have ears? Would they have eyes? Would they have noses? How about mouths? Would they have sexual organs or would they not? They have all of those features. (209-187, 1990.11.29)

In creating this world, God began with three points. From this perspective, we cannot accept the theory of evolution or the term "evolution." If the amoeba were to engage in action, it could not choose the third point base by itself, as that is created by another source of

energy. If it were to initiate motion in such a state, this motion would have to become circular, which means the number of points would need to be increased for it to become spherical motion. (212-277, 1991.1.8)

Evolutionists! Those ideas should be extirpated. Is there anyone here who believes in evolutionary theory? Learned people like professors are more than willing to believe in it. Why is this so? However much force is applied, two objects that do not complement each other cannot interact or become one; not even God Himself can bring them together! Why? Such is the law of the universe! Why? Being created based on the ideal of love with everything given its complementarities, the universe operates on a pair system.

Did human beings evolve from amoebae? There can be no harmony on a straight line. It would take a long time to explain this logically. How can three points be made lineally? How can the third and fourth points be made to create a diamond shape which allows this harmony to come about? Where does a circle come from? It cannot arise from a straight line. Does the amoeba have energy within itself to choose and form the third point? It does not. The amoeba can only relate on the plus-minus level between two points on a straight line. (211-254, 1990.12.30)

From the position of an amoeba, several thousand steps extend upward according to the laws of love; how then

can the amoeba pass through all the gates of love to the level of love of man and woman? It cannot. The problem in evolutionary theory is the question of where energy is derived extraneously. Extending the range of species is made possible only after crossing over the hills of love, so did it pass through the gates or go over them and become a monkey? The next question is this: there are males and females for everything and even in the case of minerals and chemical elements there exist plus and minus; so was evolutionary theory there before the relational concept of plus and minus? The answer is: no, it came after the concept. Then the subject-object relationship in this universe must be acknowledged. Nothing can exceed its limits. (263-273, 1994.10.15)

Harmony cannot be created on a straight line. A straight line is formed by connecting two points. For creation to take place there must be three or four points forming the dimensions of space. Who created this third point? Can the straight line create it? Give me an answer: who set the third point above and the third point below? This is how all developments in the creation of the universe can be brought about. What this means is that any action requires subject and object partners, which is why nothing can happen without them.

What is the next question in line? In thermodynamics, input always exceeds output. Then where is the logic that when an amoeba engages in development, its output is greater? It should not

increase, but decrease. In this regard, evolutionary theory should be revised. (215-232, 1991.2.18)

There is no harmony between two points on a straight line. Only with the appearance of a third point can the basis of harmony for the spherical world be established. The ability to create a third point is absent in evolutionary theory. As such, you need to understand that there are laws that do not allow us to disregard creation. Such things cannot be found on the points of a straight line. (227-267, 1992.2.14)

In view of the creation of the universe, when we consider how the base of the third point, creative energy, could be established on the original linear form of existence, we realize it is impossible to conclude that the universe began as described by the theory of evolution. The creation of the universe in fact began from this third point. The existence of these three points indicates that there is a nucleus, the third point, connecting to all existing beings as objects. (227-30, 1992.2.10)

Evolution is an outdated, obsolete theory. It has no ultimate direction. From the perspective based on there being direction and purpose, it would signify that the path bringing mutual benefit to both realms of plus and minus has been determined. That is the central path, and at the same time, the path of righteousness. In short, that is the path preferred by both realms.

Evolutionists have failed to find a solution to the argument based on the relationship of input and output. They have also been unable to suggest a direction concerning evolution. On pondering whether the amoeba has within itself the power to invoke a source of energy in order to develop into a being greater than itself, the answer is that it does not. Do not waste time talking about it. The direction for such creative development is the direction of love. (207-256, 1990.11.11)

In drawing some conclusions about the theory of evolution, we can ask the question: in order to evolve, does the amoeba create an internal source of energy through which it can develop or have the energy supplied to it? For it to evolve and develop from the present state, a source of energy must be added to the amoeba, but does it create this energy to develop or does it receive this energy from somewhere else? It is undeniable logic that if it cannot create that energy, it would need to be supplied with it.

Is it indisputable that one being evolved from another just because the two have the same bone structures? Those who claim this are totally crazy. They are lunatics. You need to understand that there are different classes of several thousands of species between the amoeba and the monkey. In short, there is distinction between species. What this means is that all species are differentiated and continue to exist through the gates of love of male and female. Then can it be claimed that just because

the bone structure of one resembles that of another, one evolved from the other, disregarding the fact that the gates of love for thousands of species need to be passed through in order for them to be connected? Have they passed through those thousands of levels of love in order to achieve development? (263-273, 1994.10.15)

When you are born, do you have your eyes closed or open? Then did you decide when you would open your eyes or did you do so naturally? Were you taught to suckle the breasts of your mother for milk or not? If not, how did you come to do so? There is an invisible magnetic bond there, that is to say, there is a principled path for everything that engages in action. In view of this, we need to understand that all actions do not take place by mere chance.

Evolutionists today say, "The universe developed on its own. It came into being naturally." The question is: how could it come into being naturally? How could it just develop from nothing? Can it come into existence without a cause, motive, process or result? Motive and cause come first, and then direction. Then why does direction come in here? Does a baby go a certain way with the consciousness, "I should go this way"? Why do the eyes open? As soon as your eyes are opened, do you look inwards or outwards? Why should you look that way? Where does such direction come from? How does it come about? From this, we can perceive that beings exist to follow a certain purpose. (94-10, 1977.6.19)

We cannot even answer all the questions about our eyes. These questions cannot be solved through dialectics and current evolutionary theory. From now, you will need to grapple with communism, and demolish evolutionary theory and dialectics. If you crush the former, the latter will collapse automatically. What is the current argument? It is the question of what comes first: mind or matter? The communist world claims, "Matter is superior, and so it comes first," and the democratic world says, "Mind comes first."

With regard to how the eyes came to be, those who think, "They came about just because they wanted to" are completely mad. Why are the eyes able to move while the nose cannot? When the question is asked, "Why do the eyes move?" the dialectical evolutionary answer would be, "Because they want to." The purpose of the eyes is to see, and because such is their purpose, they need to move. In short, they move to fulfill their purpose. The nose remains still even when dust falls on it, whereas the eyes blink repeatedly. Why do they do so? It is to moisten the eyeballs because their moisture evaporates and leaves them dry. Why are there eyelashes? They exist so as to block dust from entering the eyes. To the question, "Why is it like that?" the evolutionary dialectical answer would be because it wanted to be that way. It is not as simple as that. If the eye sees anyone who says he came to be like he is because he wanted to, it would tell him, "You mad scoundrel, stop talking nonsense!" (93-176, 1977.5.29)

### 4.1.3. Theory of evolution refuted by the logic of love

We need to resolve the issue of evolutionary theory. It is a problem because the concepts of evolution and realism have been used as tools by communism. What is invisible is truly precious. Can you see God, conscience or love? These three invisible and invaluable things are most precious for human beings. Everyone knows they have a conscience, right? Is there anyone who does not have one? Is there anyone who does not have love? However, both of these are invisible to the eye. What happens as a result of being invisible? They can enter anywhere and become one with anything. Could they enter so easily if they were visible? Since they cannot be seen, they can even enter human cells. There is no place they cannot pass through. Such logic will stand. No one can control love. True love cannot be controlled or obstructed even by the universe. (239-68, 1992.11.23)

Would evolution come first or the existence of male and female? Which would precede the other? Does actual existence come first or is it the concept of love that comes first? This is a serious matter. In order to demolish communism, we need to have a clear understanding of the logic that can subjugate evolutionary theory. Would the amoeba have existed before or after the world of experiential relationships? How did I say the connection linking the different stages between the amoeba and human beings was made? Where on earth can you find

such a foolish logic which claims amoebae changed into human beings through evolution, and completely disregards the concept that beings developed through love? (235-23, 1992.8.24)

The realm of Christian culture, which has been part of history since medieval times, was thrown into greatest confusion by humanistic doctrines. Charles Darwin's theory of evolution, with humanism as its basis, played a major role in destroying Christianity, tying and hanging it by the neck. This theory claimed there was no God. Within the world of creation, male and female in the pair system become subject and object partners. The concept of male and female, in terms of human beings, is man and woman; what then would come first, the existence of male and female or the concept of evolution? Subject and object partners can be found in every environment, but not an evolutionary process. In any environment, there must be subject and object partners. Even in the mineral world, the electron revolves around the proton as the center. In molecules, the positive and negative ions are engaged in interaction. Would they all have preceded the concept of evolution or come after it? They would have preceded it. They would be there before it. (245-49, 1993.2.28)

What would come first, the concept of evolution or the existence of male and female in the universe? Does the subject and object partnership come first? In the mineral world, too, there are positive and

negative ions, which are in a pair system of subject and object partners. The plant world is like that, too. Stamen and pistil are in a reciprocal subject-object partner relationship. How about the animal kingdom? It is made up of males and females. This is the unchanging natural law of the universe. There never was – and never will be – anyone on earth who can shift any male or female from one species to another with human self-willed force. If there were such a person, the consequences would be disastrous.

I say: stop justifying evolutionary theory. You should know that the yin-yang concept long pre-dated it. It was a secret, hidden from us as one of the mysteries of the universe, but we should no longer be ignorant of the fact that this universe was formed by the yin-yang concept and the subject-object relationship. Then which would precede the other: evolutionary theory or the yin-yang concept? It is the latter. Did Jesus come on earth to revolutionize the yin-yang concept? Yes or no? (272-255, 1995.10.6)

How does evolutionary theory say evolution took place? Claims that everything evolved from the amoeba are a load of nonsense. Can developments take place of their own accord? They take place by the investment of an extraneous source of energy coupled with an ideal relationship between two parties. Only give and take between two parties in a reciprocal relationship can give rise to developments of a higher level. (86-114, 1976.3.14)

According to evolutionary theory, amoebae developed into people. How complicated is development? Development is not about a being of a particular class adapting to its environment as it is. In order for a being to upgrade itself to a higher category, it needs to pass through the love process of plus and minus, that is, male and female. However, this reality is completely disregarded in evolutionary theory. Can a being first be a male, then develop into another male, and then develop into a female, and then another female, and so on? We develop and become higher-level beings only by passing through the gates of love, but evolutionists are oblivious to this fact. In order to evolve, one must pass through the gates of love. (208-235, 1990.11.20)

The claim that man and woman came about through evolution is problematic. Did love exist before evolution or did it come about afterwards? Which is it: before or after? It was before. Nowadays it is said that even germs exist as couples. Not amoeba, but germs. Even in the world of germs, which can only be perceived when magnified hundreds of thousands or even millions of times, we can find conjugality. Would they have pre-existed amoebae? How about that? Isn't it interesting? The fact that everything exists in pairs shows that they were created based on love. In light of this, the sensibility of love can be said to have pre-existed evolution. Then how could the different classes in the billions of stages of male-female interaction be traversed in the evolution from amoeba

to human? This is illogical in itself. Such logic is obsolete. Evolutionary theory is causing a serious problem. It has served as the basis of development for communism, which has denied God and His existence throughout its history. (223-355, 1991.11.20)

Where is the universe heading? Without recognizing this direction, we cannot have a purpose in view. Communists speak of evolutionary theory and so cannot understand the true purpose of the universe. Nevertheless, all beings are created as subject and object partners, and interact in love. What connects them is the path of love. Everything is seeking the way of love. (260-12, 1994.4.11)

Today's evolutionary theory should recognize that advancement is based on the principle of subject-object relationships. The minds of these two beings should be in accord and be stimulated through a greater mutual purpose. Only when they are spurred on to pursue the fulfillment of that purpose together can they rise to a higher place. Thus, there must be subject and object partners. The stimulation arising between the two is called love. (265-190, 1994.11.21)

Can the logic of love be found in evolutionary theory? I am talking about the theoretical basis of how concave and convex came into being. Then which came first: the theory of evolution or the yang-yin concept? Which is it? The latter came first. Then which preceded the

other: male and female, or love? Which is it? Male and female came into being because of love. (274-93, 1995.10.29)

From where did the universe originate? It was not through evolution. We need to understand that male and female existed before the concept of creation or evolution. Why did male and female come into being? It was for the sake of love. Love is the formula for all existence. (280-60, 1996.11.1)

All beings were created in pairs. What would evolutionists say if you asked them, "Why did males come into being?" They will answer, "They came into being naturally," which shows they are out of their minds. Did they come into being naturally? All males and females came into existence in order to reproduce their own species, not others. Monkeys do not become people, and snakes don't turn into frogs. Is that right or wrong? Evolutionists are ignorant people, who do not know that males and females relate on a specific level of love for their species. (209-193, 1990.11.29)

The universe protects the integrity of the reciprocal realm of subject and object partners. How would evolutionary theory look in light of this principle? One cannot go from the amoeba to higher forms of life just like that; plus and minus must become as one. When they unite, they become either a greater plus or greater minus. In this way, some beings are above and others below. In front of the standard of the one over-



all Subject Being, if a being is the object partner of the plus that corresponds to the Great Subject's positivity, it would attach itself to that plus, whereas if it were the object figure of the minus in relation to that Great Subject, it would attach itself to the minus. This is how they would form a greater plus or a greater minus, and thus develop towards a greater world. (218-266, 1991.8.19)

How can we refute evolutionary theory? It is a serious issue in the academic world. Did the male and female monkey come into being through evolution? How about that? Were male and female created through evolution? Everything down to the smallest insect in the insect kingdom exists as male and female, as stamen and pistil in the plant world and as positive and negative ions in the mineral world. Did this arise from evolution? Try asking an evolutionist the origin of male and female. What would be his answer? He could not deny that they came into existence in order to love one another and reproduce. (221-145, 1991.10.23)

Where did evolution first begin? This is the question. Young intellectuals today are caught in a trap by this question, and so are bound for hell. It is claimed that evolution began from the amoeba. Everything has been clarified by me with regard to the debate between the opposing arguments of evolution and divine creation. Evolutionary theory was fabricated by atheistic communism in a state of denial toward God. It is a monster that has wrought destruc-

tion in the scientific world and should be totally discredited. We can now perceive through the microscope a whole world of germs millions of times smaller than the amoeba. If evolution had begun from the amoeba, would the male and female germs have existed before the amoeba or after? (222-78, 1991.10.28)

We should be aware of one important question. Weren't male and female in existence based on love before evolution? Evolutionary theory is the problem. Did male and female come into being through evolution or did they pre-date it? Substantial beings came to exist based on and because of love. Man and woman – male and female – unite together for the sake of love. Such a thing as evolution could never have taken place. Substantial beings were created from the concept of love well before evolution, and therefore the word evolution is inappropriate for man and woman, male and female. They were born for love. (223-246, 1991.11.10)

At the very beginning of creation, there was the concept of love, male and female, long before claims of evolutionary theory. Man and woman get married for love, and once they are married, they are to attain oneness. For what purpose should they unite? It is solely to fulfill the purpose of love and has nothing to do with evolutionary theory.

It is one thing to understand the male-female union as the formula of creation, but quite another for a male to think about evolving into a female, and

vice versa. Such a thing cannot come about naturally. Although this is, in itself, impossible, when all is said and done, it cannot be denied that male and female can unite and that the motive behind this concept is love. In that light, evolutionary theory can never be established. So, for what reason did male and female come to exist? It was for the sake of love. (224-126, 1991.11.24)

The concept of evolution could not be found in the universe. The concept of augmentation first began based on love. It is God's ideal of creation to bring about and organize advancements based on the concept of love. Taking into consideration the concept of love that predates evolution, how can the existence of male and female as connected to the concept of love come to be understandable through evolutionary theory? The emotion of love was there before evolution, and its source has nothing to do with oneself. It was there even before man and woman came into existence. Thus, concept comes first. What is the principal palace of love? Can you work it out? (224-143, 1991.11.24)

Now that the topic of evolution has come to the forefront, let's say something about it. In the mineral world, we find the reality of plus and minus. In the animal kingdom there is male and female, and in the plant kingdom, stamen and pistil. Everything exists as masculine and feminine. In the human world it is represented by man and woman. Would they have come into being without rea-

son? For what did they come into existence? Everything is in the relationship of subject and object partners, to give and receive, and interact, centering on love at its own level. (240-290, 1992.12.13)

You have no idea how much evolutionary theory contributed to destroying Christianity. Now, however, the era has arrived in which I can shatter evolutionary theory with my bare hands. Will you continue to believe in evolutionary theory or not? Will you believe in what I say or in evolutionary theory? Now the time has come to put everything in order. Evolutionary theory is one big lie. If the power of love has extended over hundreds of thousands of generations, how could the amoeba pass through the several thousands of gates of love just like that and become a human being? Can the amoeba have within itself such ability or capacity to soar high into heaven? (240-297, 1992.12.13)

#### 4.2. The Theory of Evolution is an outdated idea

With regard to the mainstream ideologies of the world today, conceptualism and realism have become the two mainstreams of the philosophical world, giving rise to the conflict between theism and materialism, right and left wings, which has inflicted great damage on the world. Left-wing ideology, in particular, has attained worldwide supremacy through evolutionary theory. What comes first: the existence of man and woman or the existence of

love? Before there was man and woman, there existed the concept of love. Since love pre-existed them, man and woman were created to be prepared for it, that is, to be in accord with the concept of love. Hence, conceptualism and realism are not separate. What communism did not know was that conceptualism and realism can be unified through love in such a manner. (228-162, 1992.3.27)

Until now, the question of what came first between evolution and God's creation has been a topic of endless discussion among the world's scholars. Was the concept of evolution there before the concept of love? Which came first? Certainly not evolution, for it came into being after the concept of love had long been in existence. The universe of the pair system was created first, and then the structural similarities between different beings gave rise to evolutionary theory. You need to realize that evolutionary theory did not emerge because the universe was created according to its teachings.

All kinds of birds are similarly structured. Nevertheless, distinction of the species is quite another matter. Can a sparrow and a bunting mate and reproduce? That can never happen. From the amoeba to a human being, there exist divisions of the species in several thousands of stages; so could they just be disregarded and an amoeba transform into a human being all at once? Not on your life. The differentiation of species is absolute. (228-61, 1992.3.3)

The question is where to find an ideological concept that will convince even the communists to turn around and recognize the existence of the living God. How can we set the standard to absolutely deny materialism and evolutionary theory, to unite our minds and bodies, and to become the ideal starting point of a unified world? This has been the problem throughout world history.

The communist bloc propounded evolutionary theory, whereas the religious realm insisted on there being a creator; hence they fought with one another. What has been advocated by worldwide blocs all ended in failure. Therefore, these worldwide bases should not be the starting point. It should be on the individual level. Since an individual erred and brought about such a result, a choice between spiritualism and materialism should be made by the individual.

The world will become unstable without eliminating evolutionary theory and establishing the nucleus of absolute values based on a theory of creation, centered on the absolute God. (270-96, 1995.5.7)

The ideological world has been plunged into contradiction and chaos by current evolutionary theory, dialectical materialism, epistemology, spiritualism and so on. Only when the absolute truth is established can the formation of a world of absolute values become possible. The existence of absolute values is eternal, unchanging and unique. Then, when we consider what the eter-

nal, unchanging and unique principle in the universe is, we reach the conclusion that it is the love relationship between subject and object partners, cause and effect. (89-226, 1976.11.27)

The big question these days is: which is true – evolutionary theory or that the harmonious universe was created? Who determines the direction of evolution? Can it do so by itself? Can a developing being make the decision on its own? Another question is how that being can cultivate, give out and increase the energy to form a relationship with a higher realm.

Such things become possible only through God. This question cannot be explained by science. Hence, similar to human beings, matter also cherishes the desire for union with God. Such is its purpose. It is the same for everything. In this manner, humankind is the main representative of all existence in the substantial world. (111-127, 1981.2.8)

Where is the source of our thoughts? Some people say it is inside our heads, whilst others say it is inside our hearts. If someone claims that we exist because we are thinking, then where are we: in our hearts or in our heads? Then there are further questions. If we exist as resultant beings then the question we should be asking is how we came into existence, that is, what is our origin? This is the question: from where did we begin life?

In general, people believe human beings evolved from the animal world, but this is a makeshift theory fabricated

from a need for an explanation. In order to form a logical connection, the theory was invented as an expedience; there is no way of knowing if evolution really took place. Did the basis of our mind begin from the amoeba? What I am asking is: is the amoeba our mental ancestor? Evolutionary theory claims that everything began and developed from the amoeba. (117-68, 1982.2.1)

What is the current philosophical ideology concerning human existence? We need to research on a fundamental level in order to answer that question. Although we have pursued this theoretically, asking, “How did we come to be like this?” we have yet to reach a conclusion to the questions, “What is a human? What is a true human?” All scholars and renowned philosophers have pondered the question of human existence, but they have yet to reach a conclusion. “What is a human being? What is the origin of humankind?” This question still remains unanswered in both evolutionary theory and creation theory. It has not been brought to a satisfactory and settled conclusion. (170-144, 1987.11.15)

Looking at scripture, even Confucius’ teachings are rather vague, as he did not know about the personal God, Heavenly Father. There must be a Father from whom we originated, yet Confucius did not know about Him. Buddhism comments on the principle that everything in the universe returns to its origin, but does not know the personal God. One false move and they will be supporting

materialism and evolutionary theory. Since they stand at the formative stage of religion that is not dissimilar to the viewpoint of evolutionary theory, they could very easily fall into materialistic thinking. (198-257, 1990.2.4)

After the French Revolution and the process of development from humanism through the ideas of the enlightenment to communism, the latter united with Charles Darwin's theory of evolution to drive Christianity into the pit of destruction. (213-65, 1991.1.14)

Scientists today say that this universe is made up of energy, but what they do not realize is that before energy can exist, there must first be action. Confusion arises from not knowing the fact that due to there being action, there must also be subject and object partners. In forming a judgment about creation according to the concept of subject and object partners, then evolutionary theory breaks down at the fundamental level. (131-212, 1984.5.4)

I have heard that many major universities in the United States do not offer lectures on topics such as the theory of evolution. That is only proper. This theory claims, "Everything came to exist naturally!" Yet, if everyone believed that they came into being naturally, how nonsensical that would be! If you were to ask, "Came to exist naturally? Is there a subject-like nature in nature?" they will reply, "We don't really know that." What absurd talk is that? How did subject-like

nature come about? They will answer, "It happened just like that, as a physiological action, a developmental phenomenon." If you went on to ask, "Is that so? How did that arise?" then the answer they will give is, "No one knows. That's just how it came to be." There cannot be any logic in such arguments. There cannot be a result without a cause. There cannot be scientific logic that denies the law of cause and effect. (159-267, 1968.5.19)

Now evolutionary theory has become a historic relic of the past. The theory claimed that evolution brought about progression. If so, why can't evolution take place in reverse? Could it not occur in the reverse order, or in any direction, whether east or west? Who decided the direction in which to evolve? Can the evolving beings designate the direction themselves? To develop from amoeba to human, numerous stages on successively higher levels need to be traversed, and the question is: who set the direction in which to develop towards a higher level? In other words, why must the creation develop toward a higher level? (166-212, 1987.6.7)

The one flaw in all religious scriptures is the fact that they do not explain the process of the Creation. They do not talk about the purpose and process of God's creation. Much has been written, based upon all types of logic. Since they do not deal with the concept of creation, they do not know the direction and purpose of creation. Hence, everyone in the world is doing as they please, coming

up with evolutionary theory and other damaging ideas, and behaving in whatever way they like. That being so, we should clearly understand about the concept of creation. Next, we need to inquire why this world became so evil when the direction and purpose of creation did not intend this. After discovering that reason, we need to work out, going back to the very beginning, why entire nations met with destruction in the process of history as narrated by the Holy Scriptures and human history. There must be a historical view with a logical approach that can be justly approved by everyone from both gen-

eral and practical standpoints. (212-323, 1991.1.11)

A third party cannot be included in an absolute love relationship. As this logic is true, evolutionary theory cannot be justified. The amoeba cannot develop alone. It would need to develop to a new level through the relationship of positive and negative and the gates of love. Considering that religious doctrines teach reciprocal love relationships and that heavenly law precludes third-party intervention, the conclusion can be drawn that evolutionary theory cannot be sustained. (203-343, 1990.6.28)

## CHAPTER TWO

# The Creation of Humankind and the Perfection of the Ideal of Love

### Section 1. The Absolute Value of Love

#### 1.1. Man and woman

When considering the fundamentals of the universe, God created the universe through the concept of male and female, based on the ideal of reciprocity. Until now, people have not known this. (300-217, 1999.3.14)

What are the fundamentals of the universe? Humankind is subdivided between men and women. For what purpose did they come into being? Why did human beings come to be born? This is the question. The question we should deal with is: what is the most fundamental center of the universe, or, what is most precious in the universe? (217-94, 1991.5.4)

When seeking the fundamentals of the universe, we arrive at the concept of subject and object. Even the smallest woman sitting here has power within her, does she not? Would the power in this small woman desire to be the weak power of a small man, or the strong power of a big man? This is the case for the man too; if he were a small man,

he would yearn for the power of a big woman. Why is this so? It is to attain a balance. Balance is the issue; you need to be perfectly perpendicular on a horizontal base. That is why the term ideal of reciprocity arises; it is from there that the ideal of reciprocity is derived. (216-9, 1991.3.3)

Humankind is composed of men and women. Then what do they represent? The question is, of the two, who should be the seed of seeds, the focus upon which both should be centered? Man and woman, too, were created as plus and minus. There must always be plus and minus. If you look at any seed you will notice how two halves are enveloped together in one outer layer. That demonstrates the fundamental nature of the universe. Everything in existence has these same characteristics. (255-79, 1994.3.6)

How did the universe come into being? Nothing exists without a cause. For every result, there is a cause. From this perspective, what would be the cause behind the creation of man and woman? Did woman come into being to devour man? Or vice versa? No, both were created for love. If love was the cause, then



the woman came into existence for love, as did the man. Love is the cause. (283-251, 1997.4.13)

Why was woman created? She was created for the sake of love, for man. She is meant to exist for the sake of man. Why was man born? Man was born for the sake of woman. That is the essence of the original ideal of the universe. That is the law of the universe and the truth. There is nothing that can change it. This simple truth was unknown until now. (278-203, 1996.5.24)

Where is woman heading from the time of birth? Why did women come into existence? This is a big question. Women regret being born as women, do they not? Why were they born as women then? It is very simple. It may not seem so, because you are not aware of it, but it is one of the most fundamental points of the philosophy of life, and it is actually very simple. She was born for man. It is simple. The truth about the universe is simple. (246-222, 1993.4.18)

Fundamentally, this universe was created in the pair system in order to create consonance. This consonance or harmony takes place centering on love. When you think of it this way, did God establish love for the sake of man and woman, or did He establish man and woman for the sake of love? Which came first? Did God design love to be the way it is because men and women are the way they are or did God design men and women to be the way they are because

love is the way it is? In light of this, the most precious thing is that which cannot be seen. (226-81, 1992.2.2)

Why were human beings born? No one is born for him or herself. Human beings are born for a greater purpose than just themselves. Those who live only for themselves are acting contrary to the fundamental principle of their birth. People who live in this way are deserters, dropouts, degenerates, and destroyers. Did you learn this in school? Those who say they were born for themselves are not wanted by this universe. (221-313, 1991.10.27)

What belongs to woman is not for her own use. It is for man. Is there anyone who can deny this? That being so, nobody owns anything. It is not shameful to be women with nothing for yourselves but your names, for as such you can harmonize anywhere. You can harmonize with grandmothers, mothers, grandfathers, aunts and uncles. As the centrality of being women is not great, it leaves plenty of room for women to gradually expand their realm of reciprocity. This is connected to the formulated foundation based on the principles of the creation of the universe, and so it becomes definite. (255-144, 1994.3.10)

Once the seeds have become one, that is, once two seeds have come together as one, there cannot be another seed. The one who breaks this rule would be in the same position as the one who fundamentally destroyed the universe and

broke down the entire process of re-creation, that is, Satan. That is why your wives are like your younger sisters. As God's children, a husband and wife are like twins, the woman born for the man and the man for the woman. The woman is not born for herself, but for her man, and vice versa. Human beings are not born out of their own desire. So, a man cannot be loved by himself, he needs a woman. Similarly, the one who loves a woman cannot be herself, but a man. Is that not so? (253-65, 1994.1.7)

Maturing in true love is impossible without a partner. You need to understand your partner's preciousness. Your partner comes before true love. You must know that your partner comes first. If you reject this idea, it is as if you reject the origin of the universe. Doing so is a rejection of God and his creation. Please realize this. True love cannot settle where a man or a woman lives alone, but only where the two are unified. When you think this way about your couple and family, you can state, "The universe resembles me." (248-53, 1993.6.20)

Would it be all right if man and woman were identical? They are fundamentally different. If the man were east, the woman would be west; if he were south, she would be north. So women should not say things like, "Why don't men look like us?" If the woman is weak, the man should be strong, and if the woman is gentle, the man should be tough. Furthermore, the man should swing his shoulders as he walks and the woman

should swing her hips as she walks. This is how they differ. By swinging his shoulders, he is stirring everything. Such is the tone of the universe. He is in rhythm with the universe. (167-220, 1987.7.19)

Man is born for woman, and woman is born for man. Then why are they born? This is the fundamental question. Why are man and woman born? They are born to experience God's love. That is the point. Why should the two, man and woman, become one, and what are they to do when they meet? It is to attain horizontality and reach the center of the sphere. The entire universe is in the shape of a sphere. Is not the Earth also a globe floating in space? The universe, the sun – in fact, everything – floats in space. (173-205, 1988.2.18)

Why was the man born? The purpose for his birth is simple. He was born for woman. Why was she born? She was born for man. She cannot do without him any more than he can do without her. Adam and Eve were born for love. All human beings were born for love. Why is this so? God needs love and He is pleased only when He has drunk the soup of love. Even if He were to have love for breakfast, lunch, and dinner, He would still say, "Ah, I feel great!"

Would it please God to have a bundle of money brought before Him? God does not need bundles of knowledge or power, but He is bound to fall head over heels for bundles of love. That is the most precious gift humankind can offer. The proverb is apt: "All is well if there is har-

mony in the family.” This saying refers to the fundamentals of the universe. Is this not clear once you have joined the Unification Church? (148-33, 1986.10.4)

Men and women were not born to live self-centeredly. They were born to protect this universe, the origin and all results of God’s original nature, and to live as beings with such value. The characteristic common to all forms of creation is the inclination to have and love that which resembles themselves. Don’t the insects like to be where there can be found both male and female? The same is true for all bugs. Butterflies prefer those places where stamen and pistil are found in blossoms emitting their sweet fragrance. Everything in creation wishes to act, to live, and to feed in places where male and female are engaged in the act of love. (303-286, 1999.9.9)

If the Fall had not occurred, everything would be known without being taught. Then why were men and women born? That is the question. They were born for love. Why do we need that love? What is meant to be done with love? Do people live and die for love? Do people worry about living or dying for love? Yes, because love is the origin of life. We seek the origin that is the one absolute love; we are not looking for two loves. Such is the great way of the universe, the law of heaven. This law will never disappear, for this law of love is also the standard of judgment when you have gone to the spirit world. (191-36, 1989.6.24)

What links the life of the mother and the father to lineage? Love. This is what you would find if you delved deep into the fundamentals of the universe. People like me are very serious. The question of what the fundamentals of the universe are, is a very serious one. (191-11, 1989.6.24)

The fundamentals of the universe are love, life, and lineage. We are their fruit. Within us is the center of love, which safeguards life. Based on that, history and tradition are connected through lineage. This is why you need all three. You have all three of them within you, do you not? You have love, life and lineage. The three combine into one to give birth to a new person. (190-223, 1989.6.19)

At what point in time are God’s love and the love of humankind unified? This has been a historical question of great importance since the creation of the universe. Until it is answered – that is, until the origin of the universe is determined – there will never be resolution. Centering on true love, God needs to stand in the position of the nucleus and Adam and Eve would be two halves enclosing the nucleus. If you examine a chestnut, you can see this phenomenon: you would see that it is made up of two halves surrounding the germ, would you not? Likewise, with God as the nucleus, man and woman should become completely one centering on love. (177-142, 1988.5.17)

The reason man and woman meet

is love. Man is born for love and woman is born for love. Then having loved, what are they to do? They are to occupy God, the origin of the universe. In other words, cause and effect are harmonized as one. The fruit is born from the place where cause and result are brought into oneness and unity. When the fruit is born, buds will shoot forth. That is to say, it will bring forth offspring. That is how the offspring receives flesh and blood from its two parents, and is born. (197-143, 1990.1.13)

We were born for the sake of love. Love! Do you understand? This is the origin of the universe. Love, true love! That holds true for everyone, for men and for women. (198-122, 1990.1.25)

Based on what should the two become one? Not God, or man, or woman. Unity can only come about when God, Adam and Eve are centered on true love – the absolute love. Such are the fundamentals of the universe. It is simple. Even God would be a lonely God without love. (144-150, 1986.4.12)

Why does the pumpkin leaf breathe? To maintain life. Why is life sustained? For love. For what does the woman live? For what does the man live? For money? It is only for love. (223-150, 1991.11.10)

Would you exchange your beloved spouse for ten billion, or a hundred billion dollars? This is a very serious question. If you really knew how precious love is – for this love leads to the fun-

damentals of the universe – and clearly understood that without it all origins would be destroyed, what would you exchange it for? Would you exchange it for a nation? (201-15, 1990.2.28)

Do you support the communist or the democratic world? The democratic world believes in theism, that is, they put the mind first. The Unification Church states that mind and matter are one. This is the core of Unificationism which expounds on subject and object. The fundamental principle of the universe is that nothing can continue to exist alone. Though two beings may exist separately, based on love they are to become absolutely one. Though originally two, man and woman, plus and minus, must unite or monism cannot be attained. Instead, dualism is established, and dualism gives rise to the logic the world will divide into two parts that fight with each other. Therefore, though man and woman are two separate entities, they need to become one. In other words, by principle they are intended to become one centering on true love. (274-71, 1995.10.29)

## 1.2. The sexual organs perfect man and woman

The fundamental root of the universe is man and woman. The basis of the universe came to center on the love of man and woman, plus and minus. That is the status of the sexual organs. Is that not how everything is? Whatever you cast your eyes on, be it a kanga-

roo or some other animal, as soon as it is born it seeks its mother's breasts. As regards to the sexual organs, there are some animals that have their organs in the weirdest places, such as the armpit. How then do their mates find them? They give out something like ultrasonic waves. The source of the universe that connects them is the universal prime energy, which refers to God's essential energy. (299-154, 1999.2.10)

What is difference between man and woman? They are not different because of their eyes or five senses. What makes man different from woman? They are distinguished by their sexual organs. This is what sets them apart. (246-220, 1993.4.18)

Why were man and woman born? The word man came to be due to woman. It acknowledges her as the precondition. Though the man is bigger in size, he was born for the small woman. Why was woman born? What is different between man and woman? What is it? Do their hands, eyes, noses, or mouths look different? What is different? What did I say is the one thing that differs between them? One is convex while the other is concave. That's the sexual organs. What is absolutely necessary to the man is the woman's truth, and to the woman, the man's truth. What is the man's truth? What is the woman's truth? Aren't they the sexual organs? Yes, man and woman were born for their sexual organs to fit each other. Why should they fit together? For what? For love. To unite their

lives and lineages. To merge the three elements of love, life, and lineage. (196-130, 1989.12.31)

The perfection of man and woman is through their sexual organs. Think about it. Isn't this true for you? Do you have one eye or two eyes? Why do you have two? Do you have two nostrils or one? Why two? Do you have two lips or one? Again, why do you have two? How about the ears, one or two? Why two? What about your hands, one or two? Why do you have two? Do you have one foot or two feet? Why two? What about the sexual organs of woman and man, are there two of them? Are they also alike? They are different. They vary in form. The question is what is the best way to deal with them, since they are different from each other. Everything else is made in complementary pairs except the male and female sexual organs, aren't they? Why do we have sexual organs? What are they meant for? What is their purpose? Do you use them to eat when you are hungry? What is their purpose? One person alone cannot fulfill their purpose. They would remain useless forever if man and woman did not become one. Think about it. What are they there for? What does a man call upon a woman for? Is it for the eyes, the head, the body, or the heart? Which is it? Also, what does woman call upon man for? Which part of her calls out to him? Is it her lips? To fulfill the purpose of the sexual organs, one requires a partner. Thus, woman must call out to man, and man must call out to woman.

Is this absolute or relative? It is absolute. It transcends history and circumstances. Hence, regardless of eventualities or what incidents may occur, this must be fulfilled. (247-203, 1993.5.9)

What is different between a man and a woman? First of all, their bodies, including their sexual organs are different. Then to whom is the sexual organ of a man absolutely necessary? It exists for a woman.

When you look at the human sexual organs, you see that one is concave while the other is convex. Why do you think they were created like this? Organs of both sexes could have been made in pointed shapes or flat shapes, but why were they shaped so differently? It is for one's partner. The organ of man is absolutely desired by woman, and that of woman by man. Until now, no one knew that woman's sexual organ belonged to man absolutely, and that man's sexual organ belonged to woman. By occupying the organ belonging to the opposite sex, one can understand love. (299-119, 1999.2.7)

Not only the base of peace, but also everything else including God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven comes about from love. What love? Is it the love of man, the love of woman, or the love of both? It is the love of both. Where do the love of man and woman come together? Is it the face or the fingertips? The love between the two comes together through concave and convex. (263-52, 1994.8.16)

Centering on what do body and mind unite? They do not unite because of money, knowledge or power, only true love can unite mind and body. How can we know this for certain? Upon examination of the created world, we see that people are born as men and women; then, aren't those who have studied philosophy most curious to know why human beings were born? The answer is simple. Why were human beings born into the world? By human beings I mean man and woman. Then taking into consideration the question of why man and woman were born, we can answer that there is the animal that is woman and the animal that is man, and their sexual organs were made thus to unite them. Centering on what are they to unite? Centering on love. That is how human beings came to be. In light of the concept that originally God is love, it is undeniable that man and woman came into being for love. What are they to center upon in becoming one? As they are to become one for love, it is undeniable that they were created based on love.

That is why love is the universe's greatest mystery, interest, zest, concern and fascination, and evokes all superlatives in describing it. What else is there after that? Conversely, love can cause the greatest downfalls. Love is a very tricky thing, which can be formed whichever way you want. Such is love. It is the trickiest thing. (219-166, 1991.8.29)

The sexual organs are sacred entities. Is that right or not? Why do you look at me so strangely? Why are you looking

at me as if to say, “The founder of the Unification Church is talking about sexual organs”? Can pastors speak of such sexual organs? They would all be spat upon. Are there men and women who spit on the sexual organs? Do men spit on the female organs, and do women spit on the male? Sexual organs are sacred things. Sacred, sacred, sacred are the sexual organs. They are sacred. They are the place of the perfected Adam who has not fallen. They are the sacred place, the sacred palace. They are the highest palace. The sexual organs are the original palace of life and love. (285-59, 1997.6.5)

What is the purpose of the sexual organs of men and women? They are for making love, aren't they? Man and woman are essential elements to bring about love. They were born for true love, this cannot be denied. (221-145, 1991.10.23)

It would be a serious problem if there were only convex and no concave. Then, when God was creating human beings, would the concept of concave and convex, man and woman, be there first, or would it be the concept of love that was there first? Ponder this before you give me an answer. What would have come first, the concept of human beings, man and woman, or the concept of their gender? The gender is the origin, and is more important than anything else. You need to know that the male and female sexual organs are the ancestors of the creation. This has not been known until now.

The sexual organs are the progenitors of the creation of humankind. The

first ancestors are the sexual organs. From them emerged man and woman. This is the truth. By the sexual organs human beings were distinguished into man and woman. The concept of distinction came after the original concept. From the original concept of male and female, we were divided and came to be called men and women. (272-171, 1995.10.1)

When male and female came into being, would the entire body have been made first, or the sexual organs? Is the gender, female or male, decided midway in the growth process, or is it decided at first with the coming into existence and then the being grows as such? How about it, Dr. Yoon? Isn't it decided before they begin to grow? Such is the case. Who decides whether a being should be male or female? Can you become a male just because you want to be one? Women must remain absolutely as female, and men must remain as male. They cannot change back and forth.

Can I become a woman like Mother through wishful thinking? It was already decided at the time I came into existence. It is determined at that moment when the sperm meets the ovum. The sexual organs are decided before the emergence of man and woman. One cannot be almost a man and then become a woman at the last minute. The man is a man absolutely, just as the woman is a woman absolutely. (197-51, 1990.1.7)

In conclusion, into which part would God have invested the greatest effort



when He was creating human beings? Would it have been the eyes, the mouth, the nose, or the hands? People have not given the slightest thought to this. That part would be the stronghold of love. Where would the stronghold of love be? It would be the male and female sexual organs. The sexual organs are the original palace of love. It is through them that the love of man and the love of woman can be learned. Without them we would remain ignorant of love, for the owners of love could not appear. The owner of man's love is woman, and the owner of woman's love is man, and it is the love organs that qualify us as the owners of love. (302-220 1999. 6 14)

Twenty-four karat gold, or pure gold, is worth the same regardless of its origin, be it the land of Korea, a place of scenic beauty, underwater, or some remote spot in a ravine somewhere untouched by human hands. Do you think that, with regard to the spouse you are about to make love to, the sexual organs will protest, "Oh, I don't like you because your face is ugly"? Once you are in a love relationship, even a pockmarked face will look beautiful. When a white woman and a black man love each other, she will not think of him as a black man. Such things will happen. (276-87, 1996.2.4)

Did our eyelashes grow by themselves, and do our eyes shed tears just because they feel like it? Don't talk such nonsense. There must be the owner – the idea – that is the origin of this universe. How mysterious are our bodies?

Did they come into being just like that? How mysterious are the sexual organs? Could these organs, so unimaginably mysterious, be made capriciously? Nothing that is connected to life is simple. (191-53, 1989.6.24)

I'm the one who teaches that men should become the owners who closely safeguard their sexual organs, and that women too should safeguard their sexual organs carefully forever. The people who bear the responsibility of making men and women safeguard themselves are the parents having the name of True Parents. Being True Parents is very simple. They are the ones who have the power to assemble licentious men and women and make them men and women who will never again be unfaithful, but remain absolutely chaste. (271-188, 1995.8.28)

### 1.3. The sexual organs: the beginning and the end in solving fundamental problems

Women, you must not defile your sexual organs. Who did I say owns that which belongs to woman? Don't laugh! I am revealing a fundamental principle of the universe. Think about whether this is true or not. Can you imagine how I worked my fingers to the bone to find this out? The words in themselves sound simple, but do you realize how awesome their meaning is? This will divide heaven and earth and the world into two groups of people – evil and good. (177-219, 1988.5.20)

Where is the palace of love? You should not think it strange if I speak of such things. If our thinking, of the sexual organs, is not aligned with God's thinking, then the whole world will go awry. When the first step goes wrong, then the whole universe will be filled with wickedness. In my strenuous efforts to find the answer to the fundamental problems of humankind, and the root of the universe, I realized it was the sexual organs. Once I realized it was them and thought the whole matter through, I found that the harmony of heaven and earth was swirling around the sexual organs. It is an amazing fact. (197-24, 1990.1.7)

Haven't I inquired into all truths as to the complicated world? God acceded to my determination to find out everything. After going through hardship upon hardship in my quest, I realized that I had the answers right there under my nose. Of course, I was surprised and gratified, but at the same time I could not help feeling how futile my endeavors had been. (295-15, 1998.8.16)

I really did not know that the solutions to the fundamental problems that humankind wrestled with until now were this simple and easy. I underwent unbearable hardships. Being unaware of those solutions to the world's problems, I wept and cried out, went to the spirit world and searched all the way down into its filthy gutters, in short, did all sorts of things. It turned out that I had the answers all along. I said to myself, "Ah, I didn't know this!" I have every-

thing. The universe is in my hands. The entire universe has come into me. (199-314, 1990.2.21)

I grappled for nine years with the question as to the origin of the universe, and finally found the answer. It proved to be a very simple principle. Then I said, "Wow, I didn't know this simple truth. I held the answers within myself but didn't realize it." Isn't that so? An old man who dug for wild ginseng went into the deepest parts of jagged mountains like that of Mt. Taebaek to search for the plants, only to discover in the morning that the place where he had rested and urinated was a patch of wild ginseng. He hadn't been aware of it. On his way back, he decided to go back to where he rested and had a smoke when he first set out, He found the cigarette butt he had thrown away and smoked it. Lo and behold, the cigarette butt was in a patch of wild ginseng. This actually took place. At such a moment, going back for that cigarette butt and smoking it was great fortune for him. This could really happen. (196-130, 1989.12.31)

I'm not a scamp. I delved to find the principles of the universe and revealed them. To discover them, did I need to suffer hardships all my life in this world? When I discovered them, I was dumbfounded, for it proved I had the answers all along. I had all the answers within myself. As such, when you enter the spirit world and attain an ethereal state and call out, "Where is God?," from within you will come the answer, "Yes,

here I am.” It is from here that the maxim “Human beings are God” is derived. (191-43, 1989.6.24)

No one has any idea of the hardships I went through to solve the fundamental question of the universe it came into existence. I did not find the answer in passing, like one would learn the notes of a song being played on a flute. Shedding tears and blood, I concentrated my five senses and strained my nerves on the one focal point and struggled, seizing the answer in the end. Though I was able to seize the answers, if I had not had the capacity to hold onto them, God would not have allowed me to keep them. (225-281, 1992.1.26)

Whose protection do you think enabled me to survive throughout my life? Would it be due to my own effort? Is there anyone who desires to be ruined in life, and not to prosper? In order to be under the protection of heaven, we need to walk a path that does not lead to our own prosperity. What path would that be? The devil’s motto throughout history has been to live for one’s self while on earth. The universe, meanwhile, protects whoever transcends this motto, and continues with the unfinished work of creation based on living for the sake of others. It protects whoever acts in conformity with the original purpose of the Creator to seek after the ideal by living for others, on the basis of God’s fundamental ideology. Let us say the motto, “The universe protects.” (197-253, 1990.1.19)

No one knows the difficulties I had to go through in order to find this path, which was unknown by anyone. You cannot even begin to fathom the hardships I went through in my youth, groping blindly in the dark in my quest for an answer to life’s problems. I realized that the fundamental problems in our lives could be resolved only after history, the universe, and God’s anguish were solved. However, I was triumphant in the end, and built up an organization that can perform this task, not only in word but also in deed, and now the whole world testifies to it. Now the era has come, in which anyone who comes running to us and holds fast to the banner and turns around to stand with us, can enter God’s Kingdom. (209-292, 1990.11.30)

The most fundamental problem is the ignorance of the fact that the base – wherein was buried the universal gem – was lost due to the beginning of the struggle between mind and body. No one has known that the way to internal unity within oneself is to find love that will perfect oneself. This love can only be found after the universe is entirely deciphered. Otherwise one cannot arrive at the answer. What are your thoughts after listening to my words? Do you consider yourselves unfortunate or fortunate? How fortunate do you think you are? (224-164, 1991.11.24)

What is everything, such as the continuation of this universe, history, nations, and the inheritance of the ideal, centered upon? What is the root ele-

ment that sustains the world of multifarious relationships? I am asking about the central element that represents the whole. This is an important question. Among the Unification Church members, with the passage of a decade or some decades since their first joining the church, there are those who have gradually become habitual. This was not the case when they first joined the church as they worked earnestly and thought of the greater good before themselves. However as time passed, such tendencies disappeared and they became slowly caught up in the devil's net, looking to derive profit for themselves. This marks the beginning of their ruin. (253-223, 1994.1.30)

Why is the Principle so called? It is the fundamental theory. The Principle refers to the reason and logic of the origin of the universe and life. As the answers to the fundamental questions of life and the universe are revealed through the Principle, there is nothing on earth or in heaven that can stop its path. This is how the life course of peace, equilibrium and repose is found. It is important, if you become a unified being, that you do not feel distant from yourself. (258-304, 1994.3.20)

God cannot tell us what the fundamentals of the universe are, even if we pray and beseech Him with great clamor. You need to understand that it is something that cannot be disclosed to just anyone. Isn't that strange? If God were to enlighten us on this, the world would

be united in a day; however, because it is human beings who have erred and sinned, it is for them to liquidate their sins.

Since they have fallen into a state of ignorance, only people who have overcome and transcended this state of ignorance are eligible to know the truth. It is akin to those who cannot be discharged from a hospital until they are completely cured. When one has fathomed the fundamentals, what comes up is the issue of the relationship between God and humankind; and the answer is simple.

Standing before you right here is the man who has pondered more than anyone the question, "What are the fundamentals of the universe?" As I solved this problem, I could come forward with the term "Unification Church." Such a thing cannot be accomplished in the human world. When I went to the spirit world, I had to deal with everything as if at an auction in a marketplace. (198-104, 1990.1.25)

If God who is the origin of the universe did not exist, there could not be a standard of absolute values in this world. If that were the case, then the standards for human ethics and morality could not be established. A society without ethics and morality would not have any philosophical basis for human beings to become the lords of all creation. (259-127, 1994.3.29)

I'm a man who has studied science. I set out on this theoretical basis because I had faith in the infallibility of the fun-

damentals of the universe that I have discovered. Throughout my life, I have been in and out of prison, beaten and abused, and exposed to all sorts of hardships, and yet in silence, never uttering a word of defiance. I have emerged from these hardships and overcome the world. Can God, the center of true love and the source of all power, collapse? Can His partner of love collapse? If you strike yourself, you are only bound to hurt yourself, aren't you? How about God? If you were to ask Him, "Father, do You want Your object of love to be uglier or handsomer than You?" He would answer, "I'm of the same mind as any of you!"

This amazing truth of the fundamentals of the universe is like this! If you then went on to ask God, "If You had sons and daughters, wouldn't You want them to be greater than You?" He will give you the same answer. People have lost the privileged value they ought to have. (217-189, 1991.5.27)

Even if I inquired into every truth in the world, probed into the spirit world and the physical world, and searched every scripture, there would be no way to solve the question: does God exist or not? As He exists, I will not let go of a God who made the world the way it is today. I will fight to bring this problem to an end.

What is the fundamental principle under which human beings were born, and why were they born? Man was born because of woman. That is the highest truth of all truths. An ideal man stand-

ing before a woman is the highest truth. You need to realize that an ideal man is the substantial entity of truth, who has perfected the whole universe. An ideal woman standing before such a man is also the substantial entity of all substantial entities of universal truth. She is the absolute embodiment of truth. (267-230, 1995.1.8)

## Section 2. The Sexual Organs Are the Three Great Original Palaces, and the Most Holy Place

### 2.1. The original palace of love, life and lineage

How did man and woman come into existence? What makes them different? How do they become one? Centering on what do man and woman unite? Centering on the sexual organs. This is how they harmonize. Love is perfected in this place. True love is perfected for the first time there. That is also where the lives of man and woman are united, and their lineages interchanged and planted. The sexual organs are the original palace of the ideal love and lineage. The absolute original place is called the original palace, and no one can change its value. (228-51, 1992.3.3)

The sexual organs of Adam and Eve are places of greatness. That is why they are termed the original palace of love. This is an amazing term. The palace wherein all creation can be perfected and even God Himself can be perfected and dwell, in is the original palace.

Neither the kingdom in heaven nor the kingdom on earth is first; it begins in the family. The sexual organs are the original palace. These are amazing words. That place is also the original palace centered on true love, as well as true life. It is the original palace centered on lineage and the starting point of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. (263-347, 1994.10.27)

The sexual organs of human beings are the place of true love. Isn't that where man and woman are connected in the act of love? It is not anywhere else. That is the palace where the lives of man and woman are connected and made one. When man and woman are unified, their sons and daughters are born from that lineage. Therefore it is the palace of the lineage. The sexual organs are that important. (231-275, 1992.6.7)

The male and female sexual organs are the palace of love, the royal palace of love. Which is more precious: the womb or the male and female sexual organs? Answer me. Did they come into being because of the womb or vice versa? These are serious words and not for you to laugh at. The womb came into being because of the existence of man. The female sexual organ was made for man. Without the sexual organs, there cannot be love. Love could not be found. Without passing through them, life cannot continue. What good would be the existence of man and woman? Life could not continue. Without passing through them, the lineage that links history could not continue. (245-70, 1993.2.28)

What are the sexual organs? They are the palaces centered on true love, true life and true lineage. They are the most precious things. If they disappeared, so would heaven and earth, and without them, God's ideal, God's family, and God's will could not be fulfilled. They are the origin, from which the perfection of everything can be achieved. (216-218, 1991.4.1)

The female sexual organ is the universal origin. The place where one forms the connection of love is the original palace of love. It is the original palace. Love begins there. Lovemaking on the wedding night is the beginning of the original palace of love. It is the place where the life of man and woman unite for the first time. Thus, this place is the original palace of ideal life, and it is also the original palace of lineage, since lineage begins there. Furthermore, since the Kingdom of Heaven also begins there, that place is the original palace of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, the original palace of perfection of humankind and of God. (257-324, 1994.3.16)

Where is the principal place through which not only man and woman, but also God Himself can be perfected? Where can the love of God, and man and woman be perfected? Where is the central place of settlement? This is the question. If you don't know the answer to this question, you cannot expand and extend the Kingdom of Heaven of the ideal of love on earth. Is it the eyes, the nose, the hands, the feet? Where is it? It

is the concave and the convex. (261-167, 1994.6.9)

Where is the stronghold from which life begins? Where is the original homeland of love and lineage? It is the male and female sexual organs. Through what do man and woman become one? They become one centering on love. Everything begins from that point. Life begins from that point, and lineage also begins from there. You must not lose these three precious bases. They cannot be exchanged for heaven and earth. (218-133, 1991.7.14)

The original palace of love, life, and lineage are the sexual organs. The origin and the destination of true love most sought after by God are the male and female sexual organs. From there the life of man and woman fuse together. From there, their lineages are interwoven and human beings, who embodying history, is connected by a kinship of blood, which is why they are most precious. (212-297, 1991.1.8)

Your sexual organ is more important than your head. The origin of true love is not in your head. The origin of true life is not in your head. The origin of true lineage is not in your head. Where is this origin, then? It is in the sexual organs. Isn't that true? Everything can be found in the sexual organs: life, love, and lineage. They are the original palace of love. The root of life can also be found there. It is the same in the case of lineage. The sexual organs are the most precious part of not

only our body, but also our present and our past. Without them, human reproduction would be impossible. (203-104, 1990.6.17)

“My sexual organ is the original palace of love, life, and lineage.” Only in this way can it become the palace in which God can reside. Since God is the King of kings, He needs to reside in His original palace. So if you want God to come and dwell within you, you need to become the original palace of love, life, lineage, and conscience. (280-197, 1997.1.1)

The sexual organs are the palace of love. What is the current state of that palace of love? The human sexual organs are the most precious in the world: they are the palace of love, life and lineage. They are the most sacred, the most precious, in the world. Life, love and lineage are connected to them. These sacred organs were defiled by Satan. (218-176, 1991.7.28)

What is the sexual organ, the original palace where man and woman make love? It is the palace of love, life and lineage. Grandfathers and grandmothers treasure it, as do fathers and mothers, husbands and wives, and all sons and daughters yet to be born. Is there any woman or man who does not treasure it? Then why did they become such a bad thing? People regard any word connected to sex as bad. Why is it bad? It should be holy. You should accept words connected to sex as holy. The sexual organs connect to eternal love to bring forth eternal life and eternal lineage. They are the



most precious things. (210-101, 1990.12.1)

The male and female organs are the palace of life. They are the starting point of new life and the unchanging, originating place. They are the palace of life, and the unchanging palace of love. They are the foundation whereupon the conscience can settle centered on the ideal. They are the basis of lineage. From them life buds. From them love becomes one. From them man and woman unite. Since the Fall occurred through the sexual organs, they became the monsters that destroyed heaven and earth. Therefore, in the present age we treat them as evil.

They were created by God with the utmost care. The core marrow of all created beings were extracted and connected to them. The sexual organs are connected one hundred percent to the essence of love and life, and the essence of history springs from them. Hope, happiness, and the beginning of the realm of freedom based on love all stem from these organs. (262-114, 1994.7.23)

Where is the source of life, love and lineage? Where is it? It is the sexual organs. As they were subverted, they came to be the lowliest words in the world. If they had not gone awry, they would have become not the lowliest words but the grandest. They are holy words. Aren't holy words the opposite of lewd words? What could be more exalted than true words? True words are only established in reciprocal relationships, but holy words indicate the vertical, the spherical realm.

If human beings had not fallen, the male organ would be the palace of love. Therefore it cannot be used recklessly. It is also the palace of life. Isn't life generated from it? Where does life come from? The palace of life. The sexual organs are also the palace of lineage. From them our life is born, inheriting lineage. They are the source of our life, lineage, and love. As such, our ancestors should have valued and esteemed them. (206-125, 1990.10.3)

How much would God have delighted in making them? Think about which parts of the male and female bodies He would have created with the utmost pleasure and care. It is the sexual organs that were thus created. They are not receptacles for storing uncooked rice. They are receptacles that generate life. They are the sexual organs of life that initiate life. Without them, no life would emerge, even after the passing of eons. Then there would be no nations, and heaven and earth would become one vast expanse of darkness and desert. (283-256, 1997.4.13)

True love arises from that place where God's sons and daughters are born. That place is the sexual organs. However, they are treated most contemptuously. They are treated as the lowliest because heaven and earth were subverted, but in the restored world they are the original palace of love, life, lineage and conscience.

We are ignorant of the fact that without the sexual organs, no nation would have come into existence, and there

would be neither the beginning nor the development of the ideal world. (286-170, 1997.8.9)

Why did the sexual organs come into existence? They came into existence because of love, life, lineage and conscience. Without passing through them, there can be no love, life, lineage or conscience. When creating human beings, which part would have been harder for God to create, the five sensory organs of eyes, nose, and so on, or the sexual organs? Do we appeal to love through the five sensory organs? Are these the organs where love, life, lineage and conscience converge? Absolutely not. The only such place is the sexual organs. That is where the second fruits of love, life, lineage and conscience are borne, and we call these fruits our sons and daughters. Without the sexual organs, nothing can exist. The entire world would cease to exist.

Until now people have not known how precious the sexual organs are. Some might think proudly, "I am the best in the world!" but without their genitals they would be nothing. By genitals I am referring to the true sexual organs. (281-189, 1997.2.13)

Where is the palace of life, love and lineage? Isn't it the family, the couple? Isn't that place the home of conjugal love? The male and female sexual organs should fulfill that task. You all should give birth to royal descendants. Based on God's love, you need to give birth to the true princes and princesses of heaven. That is true life. You must bequeath a

true lineage to posterity. (221-13, 1991.10.20)

The sexual organs are the palace of life. The palace is the first original home representing the whole. What is the king? He is the center of formation, growth, and completion. The center of those three stages is the king. From that perspective, we consider that this Chinese character came about through revelation. Do you have the palace of love? Do men and women have the palace of love? Yet why would people that possess the palace of love worry? Would they know unhappiness? It is simple. (228-266, 1992.7.5)

Why should you be concerned with original tradition? Because the three – love, life and lineage – are the highest tradition and core. The sexual organs connect those three simultaneously. They are where engrafting takes place, the engrafting of love, life and lineage. (230-119, 1992.4.26)

The genitals through which a loving couple has intercourse are the palace of love. Love begins from that place. They are the palace of true love and the place where life first begins. Think about whether this is true or not. The sexual organs are the palace of love. In the original state without the Fall, the genitals are the palace of love, life and lineage. Where man and woman are joined together centering on love, there, life and lineage are perpetuated. (254-281, 1994.2.15)

All beings in the world give their

lives to be absorbed into the higher level, to ultimately reach the sexual organs through which men and women can give birth to God's sons and daughters who have not fallen. Minerals are absorbed by plants, plants by animals, animals by bigger animals, and bigger animals by human beings. Therefore, human beings must be qualified as lords who can absorb and digest everything.

Hence you should love in order to eat. Did you show love? What kind of place is that place? It is the sexual organs. Sexual organs are living vessels. They are the vessels that take in life. They are the palace of love. Can women and men feel love without them? They cannot. (286-144, 1997.8.9)

The final, ideal destination of the assimilation of all creation is the male and female organs. That is a fact. Why is that so? It is where the love of God, humankind and the universe combine. It is where love and life become one.

It is also where descendants are connected vertically through lineage, and through this vertical connection, countless peoples are connected horizontally. This is how God's Kingdom on earth is established. That's how valuable the sexual organs are. How important they are! (269-129, 1995.4.9)

Where did the original ancestors of humankind come from? Not the eyes, nose, mouth or hands. Where is it? Where is that holy place? It is your sexual organ. Isn't that so? The lineage is connected to that place. Hence, salva-

tion is not easy. (218-179, 1991.7.28)

You've heard of a melting pot, haven't you? What is the blast furnace, the place where the blood of man and woman are melted and blended together in the crucible? It is the sexual organs. The vessels for the generation of new life are called the sexual organs. They are the original palace of love. You need to know that they are the garden where God's love begins to bud. (302-166, 1999.6.13)

Your sexual organs are like that: "Ah, through them, children are created." Have you ever considered this? It is very important. (298-180, 1999.1.1)

In the term *saeng shik gi* (sexual organs), the Chinese character for *saeng* (生), meaning life, can be used with either *shik* (食), meaning food, or *shik* (植), meaning to plant. These organs are called the vessels that plant life. *Shik* can also be represented by the character '殖' meaning to multiply. In other words, the organs for planting life are also the organs for multiplying life. That is how we can interpret the word. The organs are the vessels for the planting of life. (302-181, 1999.6.13)

Centering on what are the Creator and the creation to become one? Love. You must know this. Thus, we arrive at the conclusion that God created everything with love. The fact that He created us centering on the genitals proves that He did so based on the theme of love. (193-163, 1989.10.3)

Everybody in history pursued this. It is incredibly powerful. It transcends culture and economics, even in the fallen world. Yet what would it have been like in the original world? If you think about it, it is most precious. It is the original palace of all palaces. It is the palace of life as well as the palace of lineage. The foundations of these three palaces are the genitals. They are the most important place. Even God seeks it. If He had occupied these three palaces, all of the people of this world would have become His kindred. (243-275, 1993.1.28)

The most precious in the human world is the original palace of love, the source of love, life and lineage. Where is that? If the Fall had not occurred, this would have become the most holy place. The male and female genitals are the original palace of love. You need to understand this. They came to be dirty due to the Fall; originally, they are the source of life and lineage. Yet the most precious source of us all was destroyed, and became the worst thing. Consequently, this must be completely reversed. (209-230, 1990.11.29)

The male and female genitals are the organs of love, life, and historical lineage. This was not known. They are most precious. Even though our model ideal ancestors, an ideal nation, and an ideal culture were to coexist together with God, this ideal was thwarted by secular humanism. The devil knew that God was seeking such a nation, and, to

completely thwart His plan, came up with a strategy that is America's secular humanism of the present day.

That is an animalistic world. The sexual organs are the palace of love, the palace in which eternal life is born, the palace that inherits the lineage that will succeed to the eternally unchanging tradition of heaven. They are the palace of true life, true love and true lineage – the most precious place of all. You cannot use them arbitrarily. You cannot open them without God's permission. They cannot be touched by anyone other than your husband or wife who has obtained the permission of God and the universe. Yet is love in America like that? (216-207, 1991.3.31)

After Adam's creation, his sexual organ – as originally intended and idealized by God, and untainted by the Fall – should become a base and original palace that is united with God. It is to connect the lineage and life centering on true love. They are the original palace of love. (290-17, 1998.2.2)

You'll hear it said that the founder of the Unification Church is a religious leader of sex. Were it not for the Fall, the sexual relationship would be the original palace of love. It would have been the original palace wherein the King can always come in and reside. You should know that it is the original palace of love. The sexual organs are the headquarters, the palace of love. (278-17, 1996.5.24)

## 2.2. The organs with which to complete God's purpose of creation

Your genitals are the organs for love. Even if a dictator were to come forth and desire to revolutionize those organs of love, it would be impossible. Despite the many changes made in history, never have the sexual organs been changed, nor will they ever be changed. They cannot be exchanged for the entire universe. The problem lies in the fact that human beings are unaware of this concept.

All problems in human beings arise from man and woman. The moment men and women are completely united a world of peace will unfold before our eyes. (276-130, 1996.2.11)

Biologically, the organ where there is the greatest concentration of nerves and veins in a human being is the sexual organ. Through these organs we can create beings that resemble us. The genitals were most painstakingly created, and yet at present they are no better than manure pails. (275-74, 1995.11.3)

God based His work of creation on the male and female organs, which are incorporated and connected to all elements including those of the spirit, the body and the blood. Didn't the elements that make up your eyes also come from there? Don't the elements of your teeth resemble those of your mother and father? Is there any part of you that doesn't take after them? Even your minds resemble those of your parents. On account of this, everything is con-

centrated on the sexual organs, and every nerve and blood vessel stems from them. The genitals are the roots. The root of a human being is not the head; our roots lie at the genitals. (194-139, 1989.10.17)

The universe began from love. What love would that be? It would be vertical and horizontal love, and frontal and posterior love. It refers to spherical love. The family is the center linking above and below, left and right, and front and back. If you were to ask God, "Where is God?" He would answer, "In the center of love." If you were to ask, "Where is the center of love?" He would say, "It is at the place of the settlement of love." To the question, "Where is the place of the settlement of love?" He would reply, "The sexual organs!" (279-48, 1996.6.9)

What is the most stimulating and sensitive part of a man? Is it his tongue? Though the organ for tasting may be very sensitive, it could not be as sensitive as the sexual organ. To satisfy the tongue, once you have tasted something, you will desire to have it again the next day, but in the case of the genitals, if you have a spouse who satisfies your sexual organ, merely thinking about that person would give you satisfaction; that is what the world will be like to you. You can taste something only when you have eaten it, but you will be able to feel your love partner by just thinking about him or her. What can give you pleasure transcending great distances and infinite space, and make you desire to love even after death and into the next life. It is the

love of your beloved husband or wife, and no other. (286-275, 1997.8.13)

Where is the source of love, life and lineage in our world? Is it the mouth or the head? Where is it? It is the sexual organs. However, through the Fall that wrecked heaven and earth, the sexual organs were defiled and became the palace and source of evil. Therein were planted false love, life and lineage. As the organs are the culprits that sold heaven and earth, they are considered indecent, and any talk about them obscene. (200-249, 1990.2.25)

Aren't the genitals magical organs? The organs connecting the love and life of man and woman, that blend and bring together their blood, are placed at the center of our bodies. These are the sexual organs. Am I right? If you were to delve into this origin, you would fathom the reason for God's act of creation.

Why did He create? What did He base His creation on? Today, there is no one who ponders such questions. Even if you were to visit all the world's libraries, you would find that I was the first to advocate this point. That is so precious. It became clear that this is the conclusion for everything. Why did He create? The fact that man and woman become one through the sexual organs proves that He created with love. It is the source of His ideal love. (194-63, 1989.10.15)

Where do man and woman join together at ninety degrees? They connect at the genitals. This is not a laugh-

ing matter; it is holy. The genitals are the original palace of love. The principle palace of love is not the eyes or the head. Which parts of man and woman are used for lovemaking? Is it the eyes, the head, or what? It is the sexual organs. So don't think of them as evil. They are considered bad due to the Fall. Satan made them the original palace that ruined this world. Aren't the sexual organs the original palace of love and life? Where does life come from? Isn't it from the genitals? What enables the connection of lineage? Is it at the head, or on the back of the hand? (198-353, 1990.2.11)

What is the original palace desired by all material elements? The male and female genitals, the minutest part with the ideal sensibility in human beings, are our highest beacon of hope. Aren't you hearing this for the first time? That is why everyone tries to invest themselves totally as they seek it. The only path you would tread even if it means forsaking your life is the path of love. This is true for everything in the universe, from the world of microorganisms to the mineral world, the plant world, and the animal world. (249-164, 1993.10.10)

All should adhere to the mainstream; those who do not follow it but instead halt halfway would degenerate somewhat. Be this as it may, what would be the greatest purpose and desire of all creation? It is to seek the place of loving God. From God's perspective, of all forms of creation, what did He create with the utmost care? It is the male and

female genitals. He concentrated all His energy into creating the human sexual organs, to make them into the source that can collect together all elements of humankind and re-create them. That place is the palace of cells, for cells are made up of elements. (249-162, 1993.10.10)

The original palace of love, the historical palace of love, comes to be where the male and female sexual organs unite. It becomes the place of repose. No one can move this place; it is eternal and absolute. In that love nest, the life of man and the life of woman assimilate, boil over, and finally explode, giving rise to a new life. Through the explosive power thus generated, a new life is brought into existence. That is why when making love even doves make explosive noises of coo-coo. Thus, in lovemaking, a man and wife should not be embarrassed at making a noise loud enough for their parents to hear them. (193-147, 1989.10.3)

What serves as the center point of left and right? It is the male and female sexual organs. When they meet as one, the cosmos and the universe revolve. That's how precious they are. It is not man and woman themselves that are precious. (243-27, 1993.1.1)

Based on the concept of love, man and woman were born as separate entities to become one through love. Based on what are they to unite? They are to unite based on love. Their genitals are the tools through which they can unite centering on love. That is why they are

in the shape of concave and convex, so that they can fit together as one. That's nothing to be embarrassed about. Man and woman are to come together and become one through their sexual organs. In other words, they are to become one body based on love, that is, become one in mind and body. Through what is the mind-body oneness of a man or a woman achieved? It is not by kissing or holding hands. They achieve complete oneness when they fit together perfectly through the sexual parts. (229-251, 1992.4.12)

Even God Himself created heaven and earth and all creation based on love. How is this evidenced? This task is important. Through what can we prove that He created for the sake of love? Not through man or woman. Then what is it? You can tell through their sexual organs.

What was God's standard in creating human beings? If one were to ask what the standard for creating the man was, would it be right to say, "God created him based upon his face"? With regard to the creation of woman, is it right to claim, "He created her to be distinguished by having less facial hair, smoother skin, and a smaller stature"? Of course not. You need to understand the fact that He created them based on the sexual organs. The man is the way he is today in correspondence to his genitals, and the woman is the way she is in correspondence to her genitals. I was the first to make this statement. No one else ever uttered such words. These are new concepts not found in libraries or



in history. (193-145, 1989.10.3)

When creating man and woman, God started out creating them based on their sexual organs. Thus, all structural elements of human beings converge there to move the sexual organs. For this reason, when man and woman unite in the act of lovemaking, conception takes place and a baby is born. What would happen when the baby is born? Whom would it take after: the woman or the man? Its birth would be possible because it has the entire nervous system in its body. Can branches sprout forth if there are no roots? The logic in this cannot be denied. Hence, when love is stirred up, it is the principle that the mind and the body be united. That is logical.

Then what are the organs by means of which love, life and lineage can be connected continuously to one's children? Those organs are the male and female organs. Then which comes first: love or life? This is the question. In the world today, the new materialistic philosophies question whether mind or body comes first. Similarly, we also need to ask ourselves which is more precious: love or life? This is the issue: which comes first? The order of importance needs to be determined. Love comes first. When God set up the ideal of creation, He did not do so centering upon Himself. Instead, He made love central, and therefore created the world as his object partner. (193-145, 1989.10.3)

What are the sexual organs for? They are for finding love. Through woman

and man finding each other, love comes into being. Such is marriage. It cannot be exchanged for anything in the universe. Man is the way he is because he was created in correspondence to his genitals. The woman too was created the way she is in correspondence to her genitals. People have been living till now without knowing the fact that woman came to be woman and man came to be man on account of their sexual organs. (280-60, 1996.11.1)

The most important issue to date has been: which organ of the body is for fulfilling love? Because of ignorance, that organ has been treated as the worst thing. What is that organ? Until now the sexual organs have been treated as something bad. What is the organ that fulfills love? What are the sexual organs? Aren't they the concave and the convex? What is the concave place for? What is the convex place for? By fitting the two together perfectly, love is connected. Without joining them together, we would not know love. The genitals are where perfected love appears and becomes absolutely one. There is no other way. (278-203, 1996.5.24)

What organ do man and woman need as partners? Is it located where they kiss? Is it accessed by touching each other's bodies? What organ is it? It is the genitals. Genitals in Korean mean the vessel wherein life is planted. That is just what the genitals are. The female organ is the tool that can occupy the man. The sexual organ is the tool to be used in seeking

love; the owner of the tool, however, is not the woman herself. Through it, she becomes qualified as the owner of love. This is true for both woman and man. (301-74, 1999.4.16)

All beings were born for love and as such should not have their sexual organs for themselves. They have them for their spouses. Unless they form a connection to their spouses, true love cannot be perfected. This is the law of heaven, by which we are all to become absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal owners.

Man alone cannot become the owner of love. Perfection takes place where one is connected to one's spouse through the sexual organs. The woman becomes perfected when connected to true love. That is, for her, perfection occurs at that place where she completely occupies the male organ. The same is true for the man. That is why we all stake our lives on it. (297-155, 1998.11.19)

Women need to become sovereigns over their ears and mouths. The Chinese characters for these three words (ear, mouth and king) combine to form the character for *seong* (聖) meaning saint. When asked, "Would you like to be a holy woman or a wicked woman?" every woman will answer that she wants to be the former. That is what is referred to here by *seong* (聖), not the *seong* (性) meaning sexual desire between man and woman. Though the same Korean word is used, the *seong* I am talking about is the combination of ear, mouth and king. You would do well to think of it

as the female genitals. This is true. Isn't it the king? By safeguarding them, you will become saints. Isn't that something worthwhile to learn? You cannot find this in any dictionary, or anywhere else. You've never seen such teachings even in Japanese textbooks, have you? (283-48, 1997.4.8)

All of us are seeking after God's world of love, the source of His love. All beings are on their way to possess the male and female organs. People are on their way to become God's partners in love. Isn't this the flawless view of the Principle? This is not some theory I thought up arbitrarily. It refers to the principles of the great way of heaven and earth. (288-334, 1998.1.1)

### 2.3. The sexual organs are the most holy place, where God dwells

The cells of the love organs of man and woman are the most minute. To have the feelings of all the cells of that part through which runs all paths of love that unites mind and body, to enter that world as one of its elements: this is the aim of all beings in the created world. Then where do man and woman unite? Through the sexual organs. That is where man and woman directly unite and become one with God. Through the Fall, the organs came to be the worst thing, but originally, they are extremely holy. When man and woman open that door, the world is opened, and when the door is closed, the world is closed; when they are happy, the world and the entire universe are happy.

To become God's child, one needs to be born through the point of unity of these organs. If not from that point, from where would God's sons and daughters be born? Thus, when man and woman are making love, of course all cells in the body desire to be a part of the sexual organs, but once they have entered the place of love the whole body feels the same way. In other words, the entire body becomes one. (248-55, 1993.6.20)

Love should be fulfilled after everything has reached maturity uniformly. What is the highest antenna in the world? What would it be? It would be the antenna of love. What is the antenna of love in human beings? The antenna of love in human beings is the male and female genitals. It is a matter of course for radio waves to run through nothing else but the antenna. Hence, a sphere needs to be formed with that antenna.

People are God's antennas. They are the antennas focused on Him. The day God's vertical love makes contact with His antennas in the world, we will enter the realm that will engulf more than the world and the entire universe. The antenna is like the device that causes thunder to strike and lightning to flash in the physical and spirit worlds. (134-197, 1985.7.20)

God wishes to live at the center. The ideal family, nation and world all desire to be connected to that root. Yet everything was lost due to the Fall. We are in a piteous plight. What is the male organ? It is the palace of eternal love. Is this

true just for your generation? It is not! It's for eternity. It's the place of the eternal palace. It is the palace of eternal life. From then, the life of man and woman are bound together as one for the first time based on love. What are the sexual organs? They are first, the palace of love, second, the palace of life, and third, the palace of God's lineage. This is the most precious thing. Wouldn't you all be happy about that? (248-111, 1993.8.1)

Conjugal and parental love settle eternally when we are married and making love. Through which part of the body do we make love? Is it the mouth, the eyes, or the ears? I don't know, but I believe you all know the answer very well! What is it? Until now, people have regarded the sexual organs as something bad, but now I'm teaching that it is the holy original palace. How amazing are the male and female sexual organs? Without them, true love, life, lineage and conscience cannot be connected. Can God's Kingdom begin without them? It cannot! Only through that organ is the world of freedom, happiness, peace and unity possible. (278-153, 1996.5.5)

What are absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience? These are all terms concerned with the genitals. The Fall refers to the failure of God and human genitals to become one. They failed to attain oneness. You must believe this absolutely. They are the pillars of the history of our family, clan, and lineage. (304-164, 1999.10.10)

Where do God and human beings meet? They meet when man and woman come together and make love, that is, when they unite through their sexual organs. The organs, however, became evil because they brought ruin to the world, heaven and earth, due to the Fall. You should think that when man and woman make love, they do so to attend God.

Every day you should think to yourselves in relation to the sexual parts of your body, "How can I connect this organ centering on love? How can I welcome and serve through it? How can I lead a conjugal life based on true love?" Our bodies are in such a position. (246-73, 1993.3.23)

We should be eternal and unchanging like God. Love is absolutely unique, eternal and unchanging, like God, and the place it settles is the sexual organs. No one knew this until now. That's how precious the genitals are. A family of happiness is formed when the sexual organs of the grandparents, parents, husband and wife, and also your sons and daughters in the future, are in union. If that is broken, the whole family falls apart. The grandmother has taken hold of the grandfather's sexual part and will try never to let it go, and the grandfather has occupied the grandmother's and will try never to lose it. Everything, love, happiness, freedom, and so on, begins from the sexual organs. That is undeniable. (278-203, 1996.5.24)

Adam and Eve were in the position

of the original palace, and their descendants were meant to become palaces naturally; however, the site for the original palace was lost. The male and female sexual organs are that amazing. You need to realize that they are the three great palaces of love, life and lineage, and at the same time, the starting base for God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. It is truly astonishing. (267-257, 1995.1.8)

All creatures on the earth are meant to be fully mobilized to become the cells of the male and female sexual organs. Why? They are worth the sacrifice because the organs are that valuable. What this means is that once Adam and Eve have become partners of love, God will dwell in them, and vertical and horizontal love will be like a tornado that can even dig up the earth and create mountains. Only love can dominate all evil things of this world, and occupy God on high. (296-90, 1998.11.3)

You think of the male and female genitals as most indecent, but that is not true. They are most holy. Centering on true love, God intended to expand His ideal kingdom from there. They are the extremely holy sanctuary. Hence, your love partner is absolute. You should marry once, not twice. (245-151, 1993.2.28)

Speaking of the male and female love organs, the latter is her love palace and the former is his. It is ideal to have the two palaces meet and make them into the queen and king of the ideal. That is referred to as loving. Those who have

shown such love can become God's sons and daughters, and together with Him, participate equally in the one ideal sphere of life. People were created to be of such value. (128-326, 1983.10.2)

What is most precious to us? The sexual organs are more precious than our nations or our ideal families. Without them our families, races and nations cannot be established. Eternal life could never come about if they were not united. That is to say, the realm of life through which we can transcend the dominion of the physical world into the spirit world, the limitless world, could never come into being without the male and female sexual organs. God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven would not exist. (298-155, 1999.1.1)

We are abused and called the scoundrels of the Unification Church because its founder teaches such things, aren't we? I don't care if we are called scoundrels. Isn't it better to win a real gold medal rather than a false one? The male and female sexual organs are gifts inherited from the Creator and the ancestors, unchanged and connected as they are. They are precious gifts that not even God Himself will interfere with, and which our ancestors cannot violate. Those who violate them would become the flesh and blood of the devil, destroying the original palace of love, the center of the great laws of heaven. The sexual organs are the original palace of life, giving birth on the foundation centered on eternal true love as the pure essence. They are

also the source of a new lineage.

Why were the sexual organs created? Certainly not just for one individual person or another. They were given to you for the great Way of heaven and earth, and the great providential governance of heaven and earth. How will the ideal world come upon the earth in the future? If the way of the rightful use of the sexual organs is not revealed, the world will come to ruin. We would never be able to find the world of peace. Look at Rome and the United States. The United States will not be ruined over lack of money.

Until now, because of Satan, we were ignorant regarding the owners of the sexual organs and how they came to be created. In order to disclose this truth, and to clean away the evil and foul tumult and turmoil of Satan, both on earth and in heaven, I came forth and hoisted my banner. (193-147, 1989.10.3)

### Section 3. The Oneness of God and Humankind, and the Perfection of the Ideal of Love

#### 3.1. The point of settlement of love where God and humankind meet

Where is the origin of love of the universe? It is God. The question here is how to put in logical order the idea of where God's love will settle. For God to become the harmonious being whose dual characteristics are separately represented in the form of Adam and Eve, created by Him, what should the harmonious being center upon? He should center on love and be in the masculine position of the

Subject in relation to all. Centered on what? Centered on love. You must know this.

Then what would God be like? Adam and Eve are the subjects with dual characteristics, and so their bodies are external and their minds are internal. Therefore, God desires to reside in their minds.

If that is the case, when Adam's and Eve's bodies as well as their minds unite, would or would not that which is at the bottom of their bodies unite too? What would that be? Would God unite with them or not? Where would He unite with them? Since He created the organs for love, where would He come to unite with human beings? Where would that place be? It would be the place of love.

(194-64, 1989.10.15)

The Unification Principle defines God as the incorporeal absolute Subject, the Subject with harmonized dual characteristics. As a being with dual characteristics, He created Adam and Eve with substantial bodies to reflect each of those characteristics. He intended to become the center in the vertical position when they were fully matured and connected to each other horizontally based on love. What this means is that when Adam and Eve reached full maturity, God's masculinity was to reside in Adam's mind, and His femininity in Eve's. This, however, does not mean that God is divided into two. Since He is the Subject Being of these dual characteristics, He can dwell in the minds of both Adam and Eve. (138-245, 1986.1.24)

When the fully mature Adam and Eve are able to form a mutual bond of love, God, who possesses dual characteristics, will repose His masculinity in Adam, and His femininity in Eve. He will be wedded by dwelling within their bodies and minds. (143-236, 1986.3.19)

The central line divides the road into equal distances, angles, and widths. There is only one line of equilibrium that can do this at the center, not two. There is only one perpendicular line with one central point on it, and only one central point that is crossed by the line of equilibrium. That one spot is where God's love, the axial love, is connected. On the day this love runs into and unites with this spot, all actions of power headed in all directions – 360 degrees – will pass through this point. Once such a power of love explodes, man and woman will completely unite, and God will enter their midst.

Doesn't God have dual characteristics? What would He be like, who is the Subject with dual characteristics as discussed in the Principle? He is a God with dual characteristics, and at the same time, the Subject with harmonized dual characteristics. What would be the essence of that Subject? It is love, absolute love. (136-37, 1985.12.20)

The substantial realm of the dual characteristics is intended to become God's partner and return to Him through true love. It is the origin-division-union action. The internal nature and external form, which were origi-

nally one, come together again substantially through the blessing of Adam and Eve. At this place where everything unites, God comes there to unite with man and woman, who are united. I've spoken these great words. God is that near to us. There is nothing better than coming to know God, who used to be at the depths of our minds. In accordance with His command, we should walk the path of victory unerringly throughout the course of our lives. (250-108, 1993.10.12)

Since God possesses dual characteristics, His masculinity is to enter Adam's mind. Thus, He becomes the internal Father. He comes into the position of the internal Father. In 1 Corinthians it is written, "Do you not know that you are God's temple?" It says our bodies are temples, wherein God can dwell. This is only too true. Since God exists as the Subject with dual characteristics, Adam is the visible representation of His invisible masculinity. Hence, Adam is God's body represented substantially. Behind Adam, the father of humanity and the substantiated corporeal form of the incorporeal being, God was meant to stand in the position of the internal Father. (139-233, 1986.1.31)

Originally, without the Fall taking place, God would have come to dwell in Adam and Eve. God is the being with the dual characteristics of external form and internal nature, and the objects of that external form and internal nature are Adam and Eve. It was God's intention to enter their minds and form the realm of

oneness of mind and body with them.

God was to be in the position of the mind of the original and perfected human beings. Human beings were in the position of His perfected body, and in this realm of mind-body oneness He would get married through Adam and Eve. That wedding is substantially and horizontally Adam and Eve's marriage, but vertically it would be God's wedding. (256-85, 1994.3.12)

Who on earth are Adam and Eve? Theirs is the position where the harmonization of humanity based on their horizontal ideal love is supposed to take place, the right angle set, and the focal point set up. That position would intersect the lines drawn from above to below, left to right, and front to back. What does this mean? Since God is the Subject with dual characteristics, and will enter the mind of Adam and Eve when they conform to the focal point of love, their wedding, as the ancestors of humankind who have not fallen, will be His wedding as well. (223-267, 1991.11.12)

Adam and Eve came into existence from the invisible dual characteristics of God. Those two characteristics make up the one being, God. They are harmonized based on true love. In this state, God stands in the masculine position, and created His son and daughter to be in the object position to this. Thus, when they grow up and became husband and wife centering on love, God on high can come down to them. He will stand as the invisible Parent and they as the visible



parents, are to be united through love. (222-317, 1991.11.6)

God has are the qualities of both masculinity and femininity. That is why He is called the Subject with dual characteristics. The Unification Church presents this wonderful conclusion, that “The Subject with dual characteristics is God.” The one who is invisible is the plus, and the ones who are visible are the minus parents. The invisible Parent is causal, the visible parents resultant. Thus, in the position of parents, God the invisible Parent and these visible parents are to become one based on love. The latter are the horizontal parents and the former the vertical Parent. (161-306, 1987.3.1)

Man and woman in union, harmonized by God’s love in the united position, represent east and west respectively. The one man and the one woman representing this universe are the combined form of the dual characteristics of God. This is inevitable. When the two are united, a central axis will be created in this universe through which the love of God can be connected. (149-229, 1986.11.23)

Where can you discover God? In this day and age, however much people might have prayed, meditated, believed in religion, and so on, they could not discover Him. That is to say, they could never find God’s true love. God and human beings have dual characteristics of internal and external, plus and minus. In this regard, God is concerned only with perfected

human beings; aside from this standard, there are no sons and daughters or anything else. (161-323, 1987.3.8)

In considering who God is, it is seen that Eve is His wife from the internal, spiritual perspective. Entering Adam and Eve, God desires to make love. The divided dual characteristics are to unite based on love, for it is only love that can form the connection in all directions. Such is the relationship between God and humankind. God is the internal “you.” However, He differs from us in that we are in the position of the His divided dual characteristics. Then why were they divided? It was to make the feeling of love more stimulating, to make it more stimulating while at the same time moving the position and changing the setting. With the move in position, reproduction came to take place. No reproduction can take place with only the vertical God. There is only one vertical position; can there be two? (187-94, 1989.1.6)

If you closely observe a woman who loves her husband, you will feel his presence with her. They have attained oneness. Isn’t this the case for God? Just as all things have dual characteristics, they all return to Him in the end through the unity of the dual characteristics.

Those who unite centering on true love become God’s friends. He enters into them. Man’s center is woman. Since she is in his relational realm, she revolves with him as the center. He is the center around which she revolves. He doesn’t

revolve around her. When he stands in the center, she naturally centers on him.

(213-266, 1991.1.21)

In order for God to be the Father, He must be connected to us through lineage, life and love. God, who is a being of dual characteristics, took pleasure in thinking about love when He was alone, but in order to become the central owner of a world of harmonized pairs in all directions, He divided the dual characteristics that are within Himself. Therefore, the Unification Church teaches not origin-antithesis-union, but rather origin-division-union. (199-276, 1990.2.20)

What happens when Adam and Eve get married? Does not God exist with dual characteristics? His femininity enters Eve and His masculinity enters Adam, and the two unite. To put it another way, Adam and Eve are the bodies of God in substantial form. In such a way, God enters the internal dual characteristics of Adam and Eve and unites with them through love. Through this, they inherit His lineage. (137-88, 1985.12.24)

Where does God enter? He enters the mind of Adam and Eve. Does God have dual characteristics? These two characteristics enter one root and bind together. This is how their sons and daughters are connected. Connected through love, and with the body, mind and spirit firmly rooted, would the sons and daughters of love born from there go to hell? No one could deal arbitrarily with it. The absolute body, mind, spirit, absolute

man and woman are united through the sexual organs, which are the source of life, love and lineage, based on God's absolute love. (194-343, 1989.10.30)

Who on earth are God, Adam and Eve? Who are Adam and Eve? If Adam had not fallen and become perfected, God would have entered into him, and if Eve had become perfected, He would have entered into her. God would have entered the separate embodiments in substantial form of His dual characteristics and brought together in union what was divided. How is God to bring this union about? It is not through force. It is through love. From love, stimulation is generated, and reproduction is brought about, the reproduction of the ideal world. (148-290, 1986.10.25)

God is the vertical Father. Adam and Eve before the Fall were to have been the horizontal parents. God is the vertical Parent to everything that exists with dual characteristics, and Adam and Eve would be their horizontal parents. Then where should they meet? True love passes through the shortest route. (199-361, 1990.2.21)

### 3.2. Fundamental principle of the ideal oneness of God and humankind in love

#### 3.2.1. Explaining the oneness of God and humankind

What is it that I have agonized over the most? It is the matter of how to facili-

tate the oneness of God and humankind in love, and how to explain it logically. If this is not clarified, this arrangement cannot logically take root. If these fundamental circumstances of love for human beings are not established, everything will go wrong. (249-223, 1993.10.10)

The love of God and the love of humankind become the issue. Whether the love of God and the love of human beings are of the same color, or of different colors, is a great matter. Where do the two loves finally settle down together? If they do not finally settle down together, and lay down the base for the oneness of God and humankind in love, neither God nor humankind can come to settle. If God feels joyful and human beings also feel joyful through love, but the place where they are doing so is different, then there will be serious trouble. (257-58, 1994.3.13)

In pursuing fundamental problems, I thought a great deal about where on earth the realm of oneness of God and humankind would be. This is a very important question. If it were not answered, the starting point and the final destination would not be in accord. In the pursuit of this question, an awakening like a flashing thunderbolt came to me: that true love passes through the shortest route. That one realization solved everything. If heaven and earth were connected through true love, it would be through the shortest distance. In other words, there is only one perpendicular. It is always at ninety degrees to

the horizontal. That is the shortest possible distance. (250-153, 1993.10.14)

Why do we marry? We marry to perfect love. If, horizontally, right and left, east and west are man and woman, then their true ideal will pass through the shortest distance, and so on the face of it, there will be only one point at the center that is at the shortest distance from horizontal love. That could only be at ninety degrees. If that angle increases, the shape formed would be an oval, which would not be proper. No other angle is the same. It is only the ninety-degree angle that allows everything to stand in the same position of equality on the same basis. Therefore, the meeting place of love through the oneness of God and humankind can only be situated at an angle of ninety degrees. (224-167, 1991.11.24)

The term for God as the vertical Father has emerged. Centered on true love, God is the vertical Parent, and Adam and Eve are the horizontal parents. Vertical and horizontal meet at ninety degrees. These are the fundamentals of the universe. Ultimately, God created human beings so He could have His wedding. He created them for His love. With this explanation, all difficult fundamental questions can be resolved. (252-319, 1993.1.5)

What I agonized over the most in delving into the fundamental truths of the universe was the question of how love moves and settles. By discovering the fact that love travels the shortest distance, everything came to be resolved.

If love were to come from above, seeing that heaven is above and the earth is below, what route would true love take to come to earth from heaven? It would take the shortest possible distance. What would that be? It is the perpendicular, isn't it? There is only one perpendicular. It is the shortest distance. Granted that love takes the fastest and shortest route, there can be only one meeting point of the heavenly and earthly worlds. There are not two. There is absolutely only one. (211-77, 1990.12.29)

Adam and Eve came into being from the invisible dual characteristics of God. Those two characteristics, which are invisible, together make up the one being. They are harmonized based on true love. In this state, God stands in the masculine position, and created His son and daughter to be in the objective position to His dual characteristics. Thus, when they grew up and became husband and wife centering on love, God on high could come down to where they were. He would stand as the invisible Parent and they as the visible parents, were to be united through true love. (222-317, 1991.11.6)

When people achieve perfection, they attain divine nature, become perfect like our Father in heaven, and attain divine value. Though God is the Absolute Being, He cannot fulfill the ideal of true love alone, for that requires a partner. Here, we need to understand the relationship between the beginning and perfection of God's true love and

the true love of human beings. If God had not established human beings as the absolute object beings of true love, and instead tried to achieve the beginning and perfection of His true love, without human beings, what would have happened? The motivating forces of the true love ideals of God and humankind would have been different, and consequently the direction and purpose of the two loves would have been different. (282-209, 1997.3.13)

Who on earth are Adam and Eve? Theirs is the position where the harmonization of humanity based on their horizontal ideal love is supposed to take place, the right angle set, and the focal point set up. That position would intersect the lines drawn from above to below, left to right, and front to back. What does this mean? Since God is the Subject with dual characteristics, and will enter the mind of Adam and Eve when they conform to the focal point of love, the wedding of these ancestors of humankind who have not fallen would be His wedding as well. (223-267, 1991.11.12)

Where is the starting point of human perfection? It is the place most precious to God and human beings, the basis for the continuance of this universe. It is the origin of all elements at the time of creation. In short, it is love. We were born for love. What would this love be? It would be true love. Nothing, not the eyes, the mouth, or the five sensory organs can part from that true love. They are meant to revolve around it, to come and go in

accordance with it, to ascend only when it ascends, and to descend only when it descends. Thus, we can concentrate our five sensory organs on one focal point. What enables this? Not money or knowledge or power. It is nothing other than true love. (210-317, 1990.12.27)

Where must vertical and horizontal come together? Where is the union of heaven and earth to take place? It takes place at the perpendicular. The path followed by love takes the shortest distance. The question of where it is supposed to settle cost me untold effort.

In clarifying the fundamentals of the universe, I came to know that there is both vertical love and horizontal love. How did I know this? We cannot rise perpendicularly in an instant – whoosh. If that could be done, we would have to stand on the spot without moving an inch. Besides, if we were to love vertically, we would have to be different. In this state, where or how would we revolve? We could not. If there is love both in heaven and on earth, the most serious question related to the way that the two loves would be connected is how these loves would be brought together. The one thing I know for certain is that love passes through the shortest distance. (214-232, 1991.2.2)

What God wants is to achieve oneness with humankind through true love. The oneness of God and humankind! This signifies the realm of the union of God and human beings. If the standard of ideal that gives joy to God were con-

tradictory to that desired by humankind, the situation would be dire. They need to become one face to face.

In other words, they need to become one horizontally and vertically. When these meet on the perpendicular, then front and back, left and right, upper and lower the right side and the left side, all twelve directions will fit in perfectly wherever they are placed, for they would all be at ninety degrees. (223-346, 1991.11.20)

Until now no one knew the logic as to where God's love and the love of humankind come together. Without this being known, the term 'Heavenly Father' would be groundless, completely irrelevant. Adam and Eve were to be God's bodies. What does it signify that everything will be as Adam and Eve named them? It means that God has entered their bodies and is naming them together.

Once they are perfected, God's internal nature would enter the man's mind and His external form would enter the woman's mind. The actual marriage ceremony of Adam and Eve was also to be God's wedding. You will understand this clearly when you pass into the spirit world. These incomprehensible theories will all make sense. Thus, only when you have completely occupied God's love will your desire be fully satisfied and will you declare, "Now it is done!" (252-119, 1993.11.14)

God is the root of love, life, lineage and the root of His kingdom on earth and in heaven. At the time of Adam and Eve's wedding, God enters their minds

and fulfills the love that arises through oneness. God is the vertical True Parent, and Adam and Eve are the horizontal true parents. Since we were given flesh and blood and born from such parents, the mind is our vertical self and the body our horizontal self.

Those who have perfected mind-body oneness in love by uniting with God in love become His sons and daughters. Once they become His princes and princesses, they are in a father-child relationship with Him, and so can inherit everything from Him. When these children attain conjugal oneness based on true love, they form a family attending God, and the starting point of peace and the ideal.

Man and woman, each being a half of the whole, unite and complete God's ideal love as His partners. That is to say, based on true love, God will perfect humankind as beings having infinite value. As such, through the perfection of true love He will perfect the world of the ideal of creation that is the home of eternal ideal love. (254-106, 1994.2.1)

God, the Subject Being of true love, created humankind as the object beings of that true love. His love ideal can be perfected only through human beings. His purpose of creation is the world of the absolute love ideal through the oneness of God and humankind in love. God created human beings as God's highest and very best object partners of His love. Accordingly, of all forms of creation, human beings are His object partners uniquely embodying His image. They

were born as visible beings in front of the invisible God. When human beings are perfected, they become God's temples. They are the corporeal beings into whom God can freely and comfortably come and dwell at any time. God's absolute overall ideal of true love is realized and fulfilled only through human beings in the form of the vertical parent-child relationship. (277-198 1996.4.16)

### 3.2.2. The base for the oneness of God and humankind

Where do God's love and the love of humankind meet? At the point where love, life and lineage settle. If it were not for that place, there would be no way for love, life and lineage to connect. What is that place, that sexual organ, and what is it used for? It is the place where the lives of man and woman connect, and where their lineage and blood intersect. God's life, love and lineage, and those of man and woman are connected through this one point of settlement. Based on it, their descendants come forth. (205-63, 1990.7.7)

Where do God's absolute love and the absolute love of humankind meet? Only at one point. Where would that be? It is where the sexual organs unite on the wedding night. Well, did you ever think about meeting God there? The question is: where would you unite with Him? If the base on which the absolute God can settle, and the ideal love desired by human beings, Adam and Eve, are not the same base but are two different ones,

then there would be two different directions and purposes for love. This would mean that human beings could never form a relationship with God's absolute love, and consequently it would be wrong to say that He created for the sake of love.

Is that not the place where our existence began? Men and women are born there. They did not come into being through kissing, did they? Therefore, would it not be desirable for the male and female sexual organs to unite absolutely? Do husbands and wives long to unite absolutely or moderately? To receive love through that organ, a woman needs to stand in the position where she attends not only her husband, but also God spiritually. Externally, Adam's sexual organ is his own, but internally, it is God's. Externally, the woman's sexual organ is also Eve's but it is His internally. What is invisible is vertical, and what is visible is horizontal. That is how the vertical Parent and the horizontal parents attain oneness. (282-306, 1997.4.7)

God's wedding takes place on Adam and Eve's wedding day. There would be one vertical wedding and one horizontal wedding. Through their sexual organs, man and woman would attain God's absolute love and at the same time, reach the center of that love and be united centered on His love. Had this come about, they would have been united centering on their minds, like God. (284-56, 1997.4.15)

God dwells in the place where love is

absolutely unchanging. He resides in the sexual organs. He is the source of love and the origin of life, the life of man and woman, and lineage. Then where would the love, life and lineage of God and humankind come together? It can only be in this place. (287-29, 1997.8.10)

Internally, Adam and Eve's marriage ceremony is God's marriage: in other words, it is a dual wedding. What unite the two are the male and female organs. Without those, one's life would not have come into being. Through the organs, the lineages and history of humanity have been perpetuated. Even God's ideal world will be established by the children, the beloved children, who have passed through those gates. That is how His kingdom will be built. (290-81, 1998.2.3)

Whose wedding is the marriage ceremony of Adam and Eve? It is God's wedding. If that had been the case, what would have been the result? The sexual organs would have become first of all the palace of God's love, the original palace of love. That is why the family is said to be the palace, because the organs are the original palace of love. The family generally is the palace, and the organs are the vertical original palace of love. How precious they are! (265-269, 1994.11.23)

Who is Adam? Had he not fallen but instead become perfect, he would have become God's body. Eve would also have become His body. Man would have become His body on the plus side,



and woman His body on the minus side. Thereupon, what would have served as the basis for them to be united? That basis would be love, the sexual organs.

Given that Adam and Eve, with God residing internally in the center of their minds, are His embodiments, what would happen when they made love through their genitals? Through whom does God make love? Through what does the mind love? Isn't it through the body? Likewise, God would enter perfected Adam, who has not fallen, like a homeowner enters his house, and the two would make love. (197-52, 1990.1.7)

Who on earth is God? He is the Creator and the vertical Parent of true love. In other words, He is the vertical Parent based on true love. Perfected Adam and Eve are the horizontal parents based on true love. These two sets of parents are to unite. Vertical and horizontal are to unite at the place where Adam and Eve make love. That place is the original palace of love, life and lineage. It is the male and female organs.

In such a manner, God Himself will give birth to His sons and daughters. They are indeed His children. You were all born of two sets of parents, and the conscience is in the reciprocal position to the vertical Parent. In view of this, the conscience is the vertical "you" and the body the horizontal "you." How do vertical and horizontal unite? If they were to unite through true parental love, the Creator's true love, body and mind would never conflict but rather would harmonize completely. (250-38, 1993.10.11)

What on earth does it mean to call God our Father? You need to know the origin of the ideal of creation. Who is God? He is our Father, and you are His children. Given that you are His children, who do you take after? You resemble Him. Would He have eyes? Would He have a nose, a mouth and ears? He would. Next, would He have a body? Would God have sexual organs? All such subjects pose questions, which must be answered logically. (196-41, 1989.12.24)

Which organ does a couple use to make love? Where do the love of God and humankind come together? There is only one starting point. If there were two, there would be two different directions and purposes, and we would consequently conclude that both God and human beings could not be happy. If God created humankind to be the object partners of His love, the starting point where His love and their love come in contact should be one and the same. Where would that point be? Not the heart. What is the most important organ for both man and woman? It is the sexual organs, the organs which God devoted the utmost care to during the creation process. (267-315, 1995.2.5)

Should not Adam and Eve's wedding be God's wedding? Where will you go to meet God, who created the object partner of His love to be superior to Him? Where will you go to unite with Him? Through the nose? Where would it be? This is a weighty matter. As such, the sexual organs, found in both men and

women, are the original garden wherein God can reside. That is where His love is perfected for the first time. That is the place where concave and convex come together as one. That is where the perfection of human beings, that is, the perfection of woman, man and God, takes place centering on love. (261-220, 1994.6.19)

Body and mind need to unite through the sexual organs. There should be only one starting place: if there were two, there would be two different directions. The final destination where the love of humankind and God's love come into contact and settle is the sexual organs. There the internal husband and the external husband are bound into oneness through love. Simply put, they are bound together where concave meets convex. (264-330, 1994.11.20)

A person reaching full maturity and marrying signifies the establishment of a relationship between God's love and the love of humankind. Centering on what? On the love organs. From a spiritual perspective, Adam's sexual organ is God's external sexual organ, and Eve's sexual organ God's internal sexual organ. From the relational point of view it signifies oneness with the woman's sexual organ. (223-19, 1991.11.7)

God's wedding is Adam and Eve's wedding, which is why His kingdom on earth and in heaven come into existence simultaneously. It starts with the love nest.

The moment the male and female

sexual organs come together without falling is the point where God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven originate. That is also the base where the three great kingships should be established. A love nest cannot be built anywhere else except in that place. (263-57, 1994.8.16)

Adam's wedding is also God's wedding. This is His greatest secret. By finding this out, I became a specialist in the anatomy of the sexual organs. Everything unites centered on the sexual organs. If not for them, man and woman would not know love, and there would be no place for their lives to come together. That is where their blood meets, where history is perpetuated, and where the conscience begins. (275-68, 1995.11.3)

From God's viewpoint, who is woman originally and what is her relationship with Him? God created humankind because of love. In this regard, should His love and the love of humankind be in conflict with each other, or united? If the latter, where should they unite? Where would it be? Have you ever considered this? You should think about it. That place is the sexual organs. (265-256, 1994.11.23)

You need to know that the tradition of love based on God and True Parents is the starting point for everything. Where do the true love of God and humankind unite and begin? In the sexual organs. What kind of sexual organs? They would be the true sexual organs desired by God. This is the conclusion. (267-321, 1995.2.5)

We seek to return to the original homeland – the place where the love of God and humankind are connected – the male and female organs. Where do the love of God and humankind begin to unite? God, who is the root of the life, love, conscience, and lineage of Adam and Eve, will, from the vertical position, inevitably enter the center of the union of the external form and internal nature of Adam and Eve, who are in the horizontal position. Therefore, Adam and Eve's marriage is also God's marriage. The male and female organs are the instruments that will liberate and perfect God. Hence, God is the Father, the vertical Father, while perfected Adam is the horizontal father. (258-78, 1994.3.16)

Do not be reckless with your sticks, but rather respect them. They are most precious. God is looking down at them; He resides in them. Furthermore, that which belongs to the wife belongs to His wife, the Queen, and should I say that which belongs to the husbands is His stick? You should think that it is the same as God's. They are not two different things. Just like the mind and the body, if God is the mind, you are His body. Though invisible, He is there with you and your sexual organs. Though the organ is attached to your bodies, you should think that what is attached to you is the unified form of two. (265-273, 1994.11.23)

Have you ever thought of your husbands' sexual organs as God's? How near does that make Him? Don't place

Him on a sky-high pedestal and worship Him. He is inside your minds. You don't realize it because He is one with you. (265-104, 1994.11.20)

Due to the Fall, the male and female organs became evil things because they became the original palace that opened the gates to the evil wave of death, the laws of death, the hell of destruction, and the wicked objects that violated the laws of heaven. This was the secret hidden in history until now. Had they not fallen, the male and female sexual organs would have become the origin of love and the original palace of love, life and lineage. As such, they should have been united with God's vertical love and the horizontal love of true parents.

Since true love flows through the shortest route, the horizontal love of human beings, Adam and Eve, would also do so, and would therefore have no choice but to form a ninety degree angle. Here, an explosion should take place, caused by the joy brought about through the oneness of Adam and Eve with God in life, love and lineage. Humanity should have been born from this unifying explosion. Thus they would have become Adam and Eve's children, and God's grandchildren. Had that come to pass, why would they go to hell? Why would they need religion? They would have lived just as they were and gone to heaven. (197-175, 1990.1.13)

Since God is in the vertical position at the center, He is vertical, and Adam and Eve are horizontal, and so the place

where they come together and unite is the sexual organs. Thus, God, the source of love and life, can dwell in that place, and since He is the origin of lineage, everything begins there.

If that which is the source of life, love and lineage were to be pulled, that is to say, if this bloodline were to be pulled, then along with it all ancestral bloodlines would emerge. If life were to be pulled, would the lives of the ancestors who come forth be pulled as well? Furthermore, if the love line were to be pulled, would the rest be pulled along also? That place, the headquarters where creation is concentrated and connected is the most precious place of all. The sexual organs are the distinguishing characteristic between men and women.

Then who were the male and female organs created to make a connection with first? Not for Adam or Eve, but for God. The Bible depicts the devil as a god of lewdness. Why did God hate him so? He completely destroyed His ideal intrinsic nature. So his banishment from the entire universe is foretold.

(194-64, 1989.10.15)

How precious are the male and female organs? The Fall came about through them, causing the ideal of all humanity to break down. They cannot have two owners, but absolutely only one. When a woman gets married and permits hers to become one with her one and only husband, it will be for eternity. Hence, the male and female organs are precious. Where do God's love and the love of humankind meet?

God created heaven and earth for the sake of the love of the ideal of creation, and the object partner of that love is humankind. Wouldn't you all want the object partner of your love to be better than yourselves? Don't you want that? How many thousands of times better should they be? If asked, "Do you want your spouse to be a thousand times or ten thousand times better?" you would answer ten thousand times. If asked, "Ten thousand or a hundred thousand times?," then it would be a hundred thousand times, and so on and so forth to many millions of times. (263-121, 1994.8.21)

Who do you think would be the partner of love desired by God in the world of creation? What would that partner be like? Could man alone be His partner? Could woman alone be His partner? What partner does He want? Not a partner for money, knowledge or power. Since He desires a love partner, we can meet Him at the place where the male and female organs unite. (279-250, 1996.9.15)

### 3.2.3. The root of true lineage: God

Were it not for the Fall, God would have become the internal Father and Mother, and Adam and Eve the external father and mother. As the sons and daughters of the internal Parent, human beings should have been born inheriting the seed of love. However, due to the Fall centering on the love of

Satan, they inherited his love, life and lineage. (223-234, 1991.11.10)

God stands in the position of the invisible internal Adam and the invisible internal Eve. In front of humankind, Adam was to stand as the substantial father, attending God, the internal Father, and Eve as the substantial mother, attending God, the internal Mother. Through this, the vertical basis was to be expanded to a horizontal foundation. (138-245, 1986.1.24)

Eve is God's future wife of love. God Himself is vertical, but He does not have a horizontal object. Unless vertical and horizontal are brought together, production cannot take place. God exists as the vertical. The vertical is perpendicular, and there can only be one perpendicular. The perpendicular world is incapable of multiplication. The configuration capable of multiplication is the horizontal foundation, since there is space for the realm of multiplication to unfold in all directions. Since He could not do it alone, God created His bodies in the form of Adam and Eve to multiply citizens for His kingdom. (203-296, 1990.6.27)

Originally, had they not fallen, Eve would have become God's wife and Adam His body. Through the love-making of Adam as God's body and Eve as God's body, the union of God and humankind, of heaven and earth, should have taken place. This union of God and of man and woman, plus and minus, should have come about, giving

way to new life and new lineage through love settled vertically and horizontally. (196-233, 1990.1.1)

Who is Adam? Since God is the root, Adam is like the newly sprouting branch and bud. God and Adam are one body. Since God is the root of life, love, lineage, and conscience, He needs to feel love first. It is the Principle that the root should precede the stem in feeling love. (264-136, 1994.10.9)

Adam and Eve occupy the position of the object partners for the love of God, who is their subject partner. God's love is to become one with them at the time and place of their first lovemaking on their wedding night. However, they would not feel as if they were united with God because He has become completely one with them. But God would already be feeling the joy of the ideal of creation through the connection of love, life and lineage. In response to God's joy, man and woman feel pleasure in making love. I am referring to the marriage and union of Adam and Eve. (253-211, 1994.1.23)

God is the source of love, life and lineage. Where would the love, life and lineage of man and woman come together? It would be the secret place of man and woman, namely their sexual organs. Thus, of all great enterprises in life, the greatest is marriage. (211-240, 1990.12.30)

Regarding the relationship between God and the progenitors of humankind, Adam and Eve, the origin of our

life is God. God is also the subject of our love and the center of our life. (53-238, 1972.2.29)

The marriage of Adam and Eve signifies the marriage of God with humankind. Similarly, all of you, as human beings, are to marry Him. Where is God? He is inside of us. (258-276, 1994.3.20)

Adam and Eve's wedding is also God's wedding. Who is Adam? He is God's firstborn son. He is the level, the horizontal and God is the vertical. In a family, horizontal expansion begins from the firstborn son. God and Adam form the one body of father and son centered on love. Then where does love become one? At the wedding of vertical Adam and Eve. They adore each other after reaching full maturity in order to find the vertical position. (263-124, 1994.8.21)

Through love, God is to enter Adam and Eve and become the internal Father, and they are to become His body, ultimately becoming God internally and externally. God is the internal God who created the universe, and humankind is the external god. Becoming husband and wife, and setting out to establish the palace of God's Kingdom is their great work of creation. Hell cannot exist when the palace is established, centered on the kingship of the universe and the royal family of Adam and Eve. (140-115, 1986.2.8)

If God and Adam had attained internal and external oneness, God would have been the internal God and Adam

the external god. God within would have been the internal God, and Adam without would have been the external god. (41-290, 1971.2.17)

God is the Creator and the vertical Parent of true love. In other words, He is the vertical Parent based on true love. Perfected Adam and Eve are the horizontal parents based on true love. These two sets of parents are to unite. Vertical and horizontal are to unite at the place where Adam and Eve make love. That place is the original palace of love, life and lineage: the male and female organs. In this way, God Himself will give birth to His sons and daughters. They are indeed His children. You were all born from two sets of parents, with the conscience in the reciprocal position to the vertical Parent. In view of this, your conscience is the vertical "you" and your body the horizontal "you." Through what do vertical and horizontal unite? Uniting through true parental love, the Creator's true love, body and mind would never conflict but rather would harmonize completely. (250-38, 1993.10.11)

If a family embodying the oneness of God and humankind in love had been realized, today we would all go straight to the Kingdom of Heaven without having to worry about heaven or hell. In this family, God can be one with human beings by making a relationship of true love centering on the genuine, great true love, which God desired as an ideal at the time of the creation. But without the true love of God and the true love

of true human beings becoming one as the true love, there would be two starting points. If God's true love and the true love of human beings were to start as two different forms of love and thus have different directions and purposes it would be impossible to find the absolute ideal world desired by God and human beings. (275-54, 1995.10.30)

The Unification Church differs from established churches in that it states that the oneness of God and humankind takes place and settles through love. Other theologies define God as holy and humankind as low and sinful. If this were the case, how could the love of God and of humankind become one? There is no answer to this. The problem lies in the belief that the absolute God can do anything. As a result, wherever Christianity went, much blood was shed. Christianity invaded plundered and created dictators, dragging God's name into it. The world should not be like that. From the viewpoint of God's original nature, that is not how things should be. (249-145, 1993.10.8)

### 3.3. Why marriage is important

#### 3.3.1. The purpose of marriage is to resemble God

These are the fundamentals of the universe and the same is also true of God's perfection. Possessing dual characteristics, Adam and Eve are to unite with Him vertically. Thus, it is human beings who will perfect and liberate God.

In addition, it is God who will perfect and liberate human beings. They cannot be separated from each other; they must all love each other together in that position. (277-25, 1996.3.17)

Since Adam and Eve arose out of God's dual characteristics, they can be said to have emerged from the same bundle. In other words, they are like brother and sister born from the same womb as twins. Touching each other, the twin brother and sister suckle separate breasts and think together centering on love. They love each other embraced in the bosom of their mother. (238-248, 1992.11.22)

Since God's original nature is composed of dual characteristics, wouldn't it be natural to see two parts when separation takes place? Man is the god of internal nature and woman is the god of external form. Only when the two are united, that is, the two separate beings are brought together, can the axis centering on love be created. This axis cannot be touched by anyone. From this we can conclude that even God must absolutely obey this axis of love. All this is logical. (206-296, 1990.10.14)

Where is the standard of unity? It is on the perpendicular. Had the Fall not occurred, where would God and humankind meet? People get married to meet God, to be engrafted to His love. Like God, we should seek the ideal object partner of our love because we are born for love and through love we are united



with the universe. This cannot be done alone. We are the divided forms of God's dual characteristics. (203-247, 1990.6.26)

Why marry? We marry to resemble God. He has dual characteristics and is a unified being in which both characteristics are harmonized. Man and woman were created to resemble each of His dual characteristics. Thus, man and woman should come together in complete unity and harmony, become like the seed, and return to the position of God's original character. For us to connect to that seed we need to go the way of love, and so we need to be born out of love. We need to be raised with love as our goal, live centering on love, and walk the path that will lead us back to God's love in heaven. You must understand that if you do not follow the path focused on that goal while living on earth, you will be headed in the wrong direction. If you keep your mind focused on leading a life of loving others you will be on the right path, no matter which way you go, as if you were trying to find your way to the South Pole or the North Pole. (138-97, 1986.1.19)

You get married not just for yourself, but for your spouse as well. Does that mean to say that marriage is more for your spouse than yourself? Since everything in heaven and earth is based on the principle of subject and object, for man and woman to get married is also a rule in heaven and earth.

If man represents right, woman represents left, this is so that they can form

a horizontal relationship in the universe. If man is subject, woman becomes his object; this forms a vertical, upper and lower relationship with God. Therefore marriage is not for the sake of just the man or just the woman. It is to conform to heavenly law. The reason man and woman are shaped differently is so they can come together according to heavenly law. (Blessing - 356)

Why get married? To love God. What can you achieve after loving Him? You become one with His axis. What are we trying to achieve by becoming one with God? What happens when we become one with Him? Why should we become one with Him? Centering on the eternal love of the absolute God, eternal life can be achieved. This is not all. You must know that starting at the point where contact is made, the right to inherit the universe is bestowed. The world created by God centering on love belongs to Him, but it can become ours through the right of inheritance. (136-39, 1985.12.20)

Why get married? It is not for Adam and Eve to discover their own love. It is to make a secondary circle centering on the nucleus which is the vertical love of God. That is the ideal. God's ideal of creation is also fulfilled centering on such a love, and only through the union of a mature man and woman can love be fulfilled and connected to life. The connection cannot be made through life, but rather through love. Centering on vertical paternal love, with horizontal conjugal love, the seed of original

love can be connected for the first time.  
(173-288, 1988.2.21)

Marriage is where the ideal of creation is perfected. The perfection of God's children, siblings, and the ideal man and woman takes place in marriage. The substantial unity of the dual characteristics, internal nature and external form as they existed before being manifested in the form of Adam and Eve, takes place here. (252-118, 1993.11.14)

Separately, God's spiritual dual characteristics were manifested in the form of Adam and Eve. Through marriage the two can reunite vertically. The moment they are united in marriage, the incomplete halves are completed, achieve perfection, and embrace each other's worlds. Only the power of love can bring this about. Not only that, but through marriage they occupy God and their spouse. That is exactly what marriage is. It cannot be done casually. (255-260, 1994.3.11)

What is marriage? Through marriage, man occupies woman's world, which he was previously ignorant about. Woman also occupies man's world. Prior to marriage, man is a mystery to woman, as is he to her. They are in the same situation. By mutually occupying each other's mysterious worlds, thereby possessing both worlds, man and woman can be united before God, the Subject of dual characteristics, and thus they can become one with Him. (261-218, 1994.6.19)

Man is born for woman, and vice ver-

sa. Marriage brings two halves to perfection. It makes the half that is man and the half that is woman whole again, and then they occupy God. Man and woman are divided as dual characteristics and then reunited in love. What was divided from the origin was reunited. (270-167, 1995.5.29)

Adam and Eve's marriage can also be said to be God's marriage. God, who is the root of love, life, lineage and conscience, should experience love first. God, and then the husband, should be welcomed into the place of marriage. God's dual characteristics should go into Adam and Eve's minds respectively. In other words, the origin divides and enters the two separately. This is how origin-division-union action takes place. Plus and minus are completely united in this way. (273-84, 1995.10.21)

Why get married? We marry to resemble God. He has dual characteristics and is a unified being in which both characteristics are harmonized. Man and woman were created to resemble each of His characteristics. Thus, man and woman should come together in complete unity and harmony, and become like a seed, returning to the position of God's original character. Marriage signifies attaining the position in which the couple can become one with God. (290-53, 1998.2.2)

What is marriage? Through marriage, woman who is only half-complete is made whole by the fulfillment of love with a man. The same is true of man, in

that he is perfected through marriage by becoming one in love with a woman. Thus, the male and female organs are absolutely necessary. The male organ was made for woman and the female sexual organ for man. Their sexual organs were not made for themselves. (265-101, 1994.11.20)

Great is the love of the first night of marriage. That is first love. This is the moment a woman offers her body, which she has safeguarded all her life, to her man. This is also the case for the man. On that night, a man offers his chaste body one hundred percent to his woman. The lives they led before marriage were all in preparation for that night. (250-97, 1993.10.12)

When man and woman meet, and love blossoms between them, do you think they should unite absolutely, or remain separate? How does absolute oneness come about? Through man and woman kissing? Through which part do they become one? Marriage is intended to perfect the ideal of the sexual organs. Marriage is to satisfy that ideal. Is that wrong or right? This may sound like a coarse conclusion, but it is not coarse at all. It seems coarse because it is expressed in the words of coarse people in a secular world, but it is holy in God's original world. Where is the most holy place desired by God? It's the place wherein love can dwell forever. (279-71, 1996.7.24)

A woman on her way to find her man should be thinking: "I am seeking the

one who is more precious than God. I am on my way to meet you with what is most precious. With great care, I have treasured and saved this my whole life. I love you." When women yearn for their men in such manner, their sexual area throbs. (206-141, 1990.10.3)

Filial love is perfected in the moment a married man and woman make love, that is, have sexual intercourse, for the first time. Here, the perfection of fraternal heart and conjugal heart takes place. This moment is also the starting point for the perfection of the heart of future parents. Thus, the woman's sexual part is the original palace of love, the origin of love. From there love begins; it does not begin in midair. (257-100, 1994.3.13)

What perfects man and woman? Married life: where the concave and convex of man and woman are unified, focused on love. You should know that is through love that they are unified. Looking from a structural point of view at the entire human body, there is nothing like the sexual organs. They were created to be the nucleus of the whole. In the process of creation, God invested the greatest effort into them. (263-261, 1994.10.15)

Mutual perfection is achieved through marriage and by the union of man and woman, who are two halves, through their sexual organs. Man becomes perfected through woman's love. He perfects her, and she him. This perfection, and union of true life, takes place centering on true love. Man and

woman are unified in true love.

It happens in the place where the two are united through activation of life, with love as the center. That is where their blood is brought together in one melting pot. Sons and daughters are born from there. You should know that place is more precious than sons and daughters, your husbands, and even God.

(280-199, 1997.1.1)

Where man and woman embrace each other in love is the place wherein the universe is unified. That is how the creation appears when it fulfills God's ideal as originally intended. (22-201, 1969.2.4)

Of all blessings, the most precious is God's love. Next is inheriting God's creative power. Just as God created Adam and Eve, we are given the power to create through the children we give birth to. Why do we love our children? It is because through them, we horizontally inherit God's great achievements; the ability to create in this substantial realm. As a result, we feel the same joy from our children that God felt when he created Adam and Eve.

Next, God bestowed upon us the right of dominion. Because of this, we can have dominion over the creation just as God has dominion over it. Therefore, we should understand that at the moment we are married, we inherit God's love, the power of re-creation and the right of dominion in the realm of perfection. Hence, marriage refers not only to the fulfillment of love, but also to inheritance of rights over creation and

dominion. (76-45, 1975.1.26)

The free sex rampant in this world is a trap Satan made to cause people to fall and to prevent them from coming closer to God. Once caught in this trap, they will die and be controlled by Satan or become his prey. In today's western societies, the USA in particular, due to the prevalence of free sex, it is becoming more and more difficult to form ideal families, and the number of people failing to form families is increasing daily. Thus, in the not-too-distant future, the majority of people will not have families at all.

When that happens, the USA will become a loveless society. I can confidently predict that it will become a hellish society in the end, dominated by anxiety and fear caused by mistrust. At this point of time, you in the USA have been given the responsibility and mission to eradicate these social trends, and instead establish a society brimming with love, the society God hopes for. (Blessing - 361)

In the Unification Church, our views on marriage are different. The purpose of marriage is for us to return to the Origin. (182-186, 1988.10.23)

### 3.3.2. Conjugal love and absoluteness

If a husband and wife love each other so much that their love is about to explode on the basis of their minds loving God and humanity, God and

the universe will be able to feel elated through that family. The love that they share cannot be anything else but the love for God and humanity. That root of love cannot be found within oneself. The love of God and humanity are its source. (35-239, 1970.10.19)

After marriage, nothing is horizontal anymore because when a higher being is connected to a lower being, the concept of perpendicularity emerges. A horizontal foundation can control the universe but not the cosmos. Only when vertical meets horizontal perpendicularly, can all sides fit together, be it heaven as earth, earth as heaven, front as back, back as front, right as left, high as low and before as after. The perfected standard on earth leads to the total perfection of the spirit world. (230-259, 1992.5.8)

After getting married, the place where husband and wife share true love is the origin of the love, life and lineage of God and humankind. This palace is the starting point of God's Ideal, His kingdom on earth and in heaven. The children born of this true love then achieve conjugal oneness by focusing on true love, form a family that attends God, and become the starting point of peace and the ideal. Man and woman, who are only halves by themselves, unite and complete the ideal love of God as His object partners. (259-45, 1994.3.27)

When a man and a woman receive the Blessing and feel joy by giving and receiving perfected love, in God's eyes,

it's like a flower blossoming on earth. Moreover, everything that occurs through their love is like the fragrance of flowers to Him. He would then come to reside in such a family, since He desires to live amidst such a beautiful fragrance. The foundation where His love comes down is where conjugal love takes place. That will also become the place where all things and the universe can unite in harmony. (Blessing - 887)

Who is the owner of the male and female organs? It is the vertical God. Where do the ideal love of God and human beings come together? In the sexual organs. We marry to meet God. These are amazing words. God does not reside in some other separate place. When we have attained that position we will find Him dwelling there. Where does the teaching concerning the three great subjects come together and take root? It is in love. The love of God and human beings come together through the sexual organs. Marriage is for us to be engrafted to God's vertical love.

Thunder and lightning caused by negative and positive electricity on a cloudy day symbolizes the marriage of the universe. A loud noise is audible at such times, right? Are not pigeons noisy when they make love? Do you cry out when making love? I'm sure you have a hard time stifling the cry that threatens to come out of your mouths lest your mother and father may hear you. Be spontaneous. There is no need to hide such things. It is no longer a sin to shout until the windowpanes shatter all

at once. Just as lightning flashes with a peal of thunder, so should you blaze. In marriage, you should attain that state of living in attendance of a holy woman or man, and God. Buddhist monks will never get to know such a world of love, no matter how much they practice asceticism. (203-255, 1990.6.26)

Do you think God does not see you making love? It is all out in the open. It is open for the universe to see. It is very wrong to be unaware of this fact. Your ancestors are watching from the spirit world; they can see it as if it is taking place right before their eyes, like on the palm of their hands. Therefore it is very wrong to think making love is embarrassing. (250-244, 1993.10.15)

Love is eternal. There cannot be two loves that are eternal but only one. When man and woman are bound together through love, they should live together in happy union while on earth until parted by death. Even after death they should live together eternally. Although there are two bodies, they attain oneness by reuniting. When the two bodies unite, they are to revolve around God, thereby establishing the four-position foundation of love; that is the ideal world. False love cannot invade this world, and only true love will dwell there. (Blessing - 344)

What sort of a couple are an ideal husband and wife? They are the husband and wife who can substantially manifest the highest art and greatest literature. Before they can come in contact with

the highest ideal and cultural world, the sweetest, greatest love shared by husband and wife should become the best work of art in the world. Their conjugal life should become the greatest work of literature, the embodiment of literature itself. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

Art should be manifested in the family. Husbands should become entertaining and artistic. If you find a good article in a magazine, mark it up and read it out loud in a wonderful voice to your wife as she is about to fall asleep. If you imagine in a dream that your wife was moved with emotion just as she went to sleep, it will come true. You would be connected to the spirit world. How splendid that is! Would you like to live like that, or would you prefer living like an unrefined couple? If you want to live in style, first adopt a flamboyant attitude and direction. That is the first condition. (271-282, 1995.8.28)

By giving birth to a baby you occupy the top quarter of God's world. By ascending to God's position and loving our children, we can experience God's inner heart and how much He loved human beings after creating them. (224-28, 1991.11.21)

By giving birth to sons and daughters and taking on the position of parents, a couple can experience how joyful God felt when He was creating human beings. Through the experience of having sons and daughters we are initiated into the world where we can inherit all God's

powers, the Great Subject of heaven and earth. The responsibility of the mother and father entails producing sons and daughters, raising them well and marrying them off. God was to raise Adam and Eve and marry them, but He could not do so. Adam and Eve also failed to give birth to sons and daughters and have them married. This deplorable failure must be resolved. These become the principles of education. (223-196, 1991.11.10)

A couple can perpetuate their lineage by uniting and having sons and daughters. They can experience God's joy of creating in this horizontal world through being elevated to the position of creators, and giving birth to sons and daughters. Thus, the wife should be treated the same as the sons and daughters because her position combines that of sons, daughters and siblings. Hence, husband and wife cannot be separated. Love is not meant to be satisfied thoughtlessly. In order to have sons and daughters, the couple needs to reach the inherent standard originally desired by God as the ideal of creation by complying with all such traditions. In this way, the family becomes the foundation for the Kingdom of Heaven. (223-24, 1991.11.7)

Circular motion manifests in all sorts of forms and figures once you become one centered on God. That is why the older sibling must love the younger, following the example of their parents loving them. Love within the family blossoms when a family unites into one in that way, the. Then that family love

becomes love within a society, and then the love within a nation. In this way, it becomes the love of the whole world. (28-168, 1970.1.11)

Since God is the original substance of true love, when one gets connected to true love, everyone becomes part of one body. Parents are gods living in God's stead on earth, husband and wife are mutual counterpart gods, and sons and daughters are little gods. A family structure comprising three generations with true love as the focus is the basis of the Kingdom of Heaven. Without achieving this type of family, the kingdom cannot be established. The family is the center of the universe. The perfection of the family is the basis for the perfection of the universe, and so if there is love in a family and love for the universe, you can freely go anywhere. Then God would stand in the combined central position of love as the Parent of the whole universe. (298-306, 1999.1.17)

Monuments of peace should be erected for woman's chastity and man's fidelity because man and woman are trusted absolutely. When this is equalized for eternity there will be happiness. The treasure of all treasures is woman; she was but one half, however in occupying her husband, heaven and earth are reunited. To God, who is above us, sons and daughters are born, who are below Him. In short, an upper-lower relationship is formed.

Next, based on the conjugal relationship, expansion takes place in all direc-



tions. At last the family can settle down centering on the front and back relationship of siblings. One needs to have brothers and sisters. This organization of the relationships of up and down, left and right, and front and back, must take firm root.

As such, the only treasure man has is his wife. Even if he were to abandon all his assets, the one thing he cannot change is his wife. She is his one and only treasure. (2000.9.1)

## Section 4. The Sexual Organs Are the Greatest Mystery and Interest

### 4.1. The sexual organs were created with utmost diligence

Why is the universe based on the pair system? Did it happen naturally? We can talk about today's theory of evolution, but what is the better-known truth that came before the theory of evolution? Men and women have genitals, the sexual organs. Have these organs evolved? If they have, then the way of lovemaking would have changed as well. People of the present would have a more developed way of making love than those of the past. Even in the insect kingdom, lovemaking between bugs would be different today from what it was in the past. Birds too would mate in a different way. Discussions should be held based on such factors. Are the love organs, which are the source of life, made to develop through evolution? Did our eyelashes grow by themselves and do our eyes shed

tears just because they feel like it? Don't talk such nonsense.

There must be the owner – the idea – that is the origin of this universe. How mysterious are our bodies? Did they come into being just like that? How mysterious are the sexual organs? Could these organs, so unimaginably mysterious, be made just like that? Nothing that is connected to life is simple. (191-53, 1989.6.24)

The material world yearns to become the cells of the male and female organs because they are the final destination of hope. Through becoming one of these cells, they become invaluable, because that is where they can come into contact with God's love. Hence, all the essential nuclei and cells of the universe are focused on the operation of the male and female organs. Power is coursing through love and emanating from them: this can even move the universe. Because of this, one desires to sacrifice oneself for the sake of one's beloved.

(287-303, 1997.10.6)

All physiological senses are concentrated at the sexual organs. God exercised utmost diligence in creating them. As such, they became the organs that connect history and re-create life. Without knowing anything, you have sexual intercourse and produce sons and daughters, but that is not the way it should be. God, who created the organs, intended every element to be connected to them. Hence, when they are activated, the fundamental elements of life all get

connected to them, and explode like a power station. That is called love. (255-306, 1994.3.11)

Are you married? Do you have husbands? When animals are in heat and yearning for a mate they go out in search of their mates by scent and not sight. Similarly, you need to initiate a great physiological revolution. But due to the Fall, we have not yet reached the standard of using all our senses. What is lovemaking like for animals? You watched the movie earlier today, didn't you? In the Dong River located in Gangwon Province you can find *Hemibarbus mylodon*, a type of fish with no sexual organs. There is a line running through the body of the fish, and that is their sexual organ. When the females give off their odor in heat, the males rub their bodies against the line on the bodies of the females, and there is a spark. Then the males secrete seminal fluid. It is truly amazing. How are they able to lay eggs in water? That is how they make love. (301-195, 1999.4.26)

According to the theory of evolution, who made the distinction between male and female gender? Was it the amoeba? Darwin, that rascal, I should shake him to his senses. Do you know how much more mysterious and complicated the structure of the male and female organs are compared to your skeletal structure? How would you answer this question, Dr. Yoon? Well, how would you answer? Is the statement "The structure of the sexual organs is more complicated than our skeletal structure" correct? Yes, the

structure of the sexual organs is more complicated. (197-22, 1990.1.7)

#### 4.2. The owners of the sexual organs were interchanged

Man's treasure is not owned by him. It is owned by the woman, and her treasure belongs to him. In short, ownership has been exchanged. The woman does not own her sexual organ. She needs to know that it belongs to her man; it is not hers. The same is true for the man. Therefore one cannot do as one likes with their sexual organs. American women think of their organs as belonging to them. As a result, they act freely and do whatever they want with them. This is also the case for the men. But you are only the caretaker of your sexual organ. In other words, the caretakers are passing themselves off as the owners.

I ask the women: When did you meet the owner of your sexual organ? The owner is your husband. And you men: Do yours belong to you? Then what is marriage? Through marriage men and women are to find the owners of their sexual organs. Love is negative and positive electricity searching around for each other and meeting to produce lightning. Love is similar. A woman gets married not for a man's face but for this. A man gets married not for a woman's hand but for this. If man and woman are meant to marry among themselves, how can there be gays or lesbians? They will cease to exist. In less than a century, they will be gone in one generation. In light of this, should you get married or

not? Why get married? Because this is the way it is, you need to get married. You must absolutely get married. (162-50, 1987.3.22)

Women's sexual organs are not for themselves, but for their husbands. Until now they have thought of them as their own, but that is not so. They have no need of them. Men are the ones who need them. Women need to realize that what they have belongs to the men. It belongs to the men, to their husbands. Despite that, women feel possessive about them and so wickedly ruin everything in this world. Without men, what would they use them for? I am asking: what could they be used for? This is a serious question. Previously that was not understood. (275-132, 1995.12.4)

The owner of man's love is woman. She owns it. The owner of woman's love is man. He owns it. All men know this. To whom do those things dangling from men's bodies belong? This was previously not understood. Thinking that your sexual organ belongs to you is a sin. It is a grave sin for women to think that their sexual organs belong to them. (141-172, 1986.2.21)

True men should not change. True women do not change. Where can these men and women who are absolutely unchanging in true love be found? If there were such people the entire universe would bow down before them. That is how it would be. Since He is the King of wisdom, God let women keep

the treasure of men, and men keep the treasure of women. That is the case for the sexual organs. (142-335, 1986.3.14)

For what purpose were human beings born? To seek the path of love. So the sexual organs men and women have do not belong to them. The organ dangling from man's body is not his. However, he regarded it as his possession. Woman is not the owner of her sexual organ; it is the man's. The owner of the sexual organ on man's body is woman. You must understand this amazing fact that, in this way, the love organs and their owners were interchanged. (143-66, 1986.3.15)

Woman and man are different in one respect. What way is that? Is it not in their sexual organs? Does a woman's sexual organ belong to her? Does it belong to her after she is married? It is her husband's. Also, what is that dangling from the body of the husband? Whose is it? It is the woman's for eternity. The right of ownership of absolute love is determined centering on true love. If one has an affair in the satanic world there is only way he can be forgiven; that can happen when he has taken a knife to cut it off, but then does not only because his wife held his hand back and prevented him from doing so. (180-334, 1988.10.5)

Can man and woman unite by kissing or by embracing each other? Complete unity takes place only in married life, which brings man and woman together as the interchanged owners of their sexual organs. (190-130, 1989.6.18)

Man is there for the object partner before him, woman. Since God is the King of wisdom, to prevent them from fighting and staying apart, He placed the most precious parts of each on the other's body, that is, He interchanged the owners. Those precious parts are the male and female organs. It is the most holy place. Wasn't the place built to store the Ark of the Covenant called the most holy place? Anyone who touched it was struck down by lightning and destruction was wrought for his generation and myriads of generations to come. The sole owner, the chief priest, is the husband. (190-134, 1989.6.18)

In the process of creation, God did not make man and woman haphazardly. He created them based on the sexual organs. Why? It was because He is the ancestor of love, the origin of life, and the origin of lineage. Man transmits ideal love there. The woman's sexual organ belongs to her man and his to her. They are not the owners of their organs. Hence, they are not the ones who can open them. Woman cannot open hers. Man cannot open his. Only she can open his and he hers. The focal point of love comes to fruition at that place. (193-301, 1989.10.8)

Man was born for woman. Woman was born for man. Thus, the sexual organs of man and woman do not belong to them. God is very wise; He interchanged the owners. Aren't those men who have affairs utter scoundrels? They are the lowest of the low and deserve

to be struck down by lightning! Such behavior can never be forgiven in the Unification Church. (198-122, 1990.1.25)

Who is the owner of that concave female organ? Is it the woman or the man who needs it? Does woman need it absolutely or man? Man. Also, his is absolutely necessary to her. In terms of who holds the keys to them, he has hers and she has his. Thus, there is only one person who can open it. Since true love is one, only true men and women can be in charge of it. (210-108, 1990.12.1)

Who is the owner of the female organ? Man. The male organ is needed by the woman, and the female organ by the man. They were created correspondingly in that way. The owners were interchanged. (227-59, 1992.2.10)

Love wants to be absolute. Absolute means there is only one, not two. Something that is absolute is eternally one. Therefore, only one man and one woman can be allowed as the partner of love. As such, God created one Adam and one Eve. How can that be denied? No one could change that. (254-273, 1994.2.15)

For whom did woman's breasts come into being? For herself? For her sons and daughters, not for herself. For whom does she have big hips? Again, her sons and daughters. The owners of her breasts are her children. How about the sexual organ? It is for her spouse. Why? Everything on earth came to exist for the sake of others. Who is the owner of

the female organ? Her husband. Who is the owner? The husband, not the woman herself. Then who is the owner of the man's organ? The woman. God is truly amazing. He has interchanged owners to make it impossible for either to run away. (201-196, 1990.4.1)

A woman's face is not for herself. It is the face in which her husband can take delight. Nothing is hers. Her sexual organ placed down below in her center is not hers. It belongs to her husband. Not one part of the woman's body was created for her. They are all for her husband and her sons and daughters. Such is the path trod by woman: she is the one who can embrace the two worlds. She should clasp hands. The one who can become the vessel of love that will embrace the vertical and horizontal worlds on earth for the first time is the woman. (263-180, 1994.8.23)

With regard to the female body, her breasts and hips were created for her baby, and her face and the part that is covered up, are for her husband. This is the case of all parts of her body, upper and lower, left and right. There is not one that is for herself. Who own it? The owner of what? I am referring to the female organ. It is not hers. It belongs to man. She cannot do whatever she likes with something that belongs to him. If only this had been known, the world would not have become chaotic like this. How could there be free sex or homosexuality? Isn't it theft to use somebody else's property as one pleases? Thieves will end

up in a bad situation. (290-158, 1998.2.18)

Present with us today are presidents from more than ten nations; I would like to ask them: try broadcasting this message on the air. Ask whether man's sexual organ is for himself or for woman. Those who claim theirs belongs to them are thieves. Those who think that they own what they have are thieves. This is not a laughing matter. It is a historical declaration. If everyone lived in accordance with this, the world of peace would unfold right before our eyes. As far as God's will is concerned, the most important things are those related to love. To instruct human beings about His will concerning love, God created the most precious organ, that is, the sexual organ, and the male organ belongs to woman, and the woman's organ to man! Amen! Do you think this is not true? Do you think this is wrong? (277-182, 1996.4.15)

The male and female organs are the poles, plus and minus, that can possess God's love. They are the charging plates of a battery. Without them, we could not be charged up with God's love. Since human beings refill their love through that organ, they can do so daily. Animals however cannot. They can only do it yearly. (134-200, 1985.7.20)

The family system in the United States is such that grandfathers and grandmothers cannot visit their grandson's house whenever they like. If they want to visit him, they have to call first. Such procedures have to be followed

before a visit. Think about it. In a love relationship, should one ask his or her spouse, "Let's make love tonight!" and get permission? Be it the wife or the husband, if one says, "Let's make love!" the other has to say okay. These are conjugal obligations. That is how it is. One cannot answer, "I'm tired, I don't want to!" Your organ is not yours. The owner of the female organ is man, and the owner of the male organ is woman. Who could deny this? (246-53, 1993.3.23)

You women, do you have such big breasts for yourselves? Do you have big hips for yourselves? There is not one part of you that belongs to you. Everything that women have is not theirs. It is for others, for their children and their husbands. None of their physiological organs or the sexual organ exists for the woman alone. Then who would be the owner of the male organ? The owner is woman. It is the wife who holds the key. If she were to use it wrongly, she would incur the punishment of heaven. Why did Sodom and Gomorrah go to ruin? Why is the United States on the way to destruction? They came to ruin through drugs and promiscuity. (142-150, 1986.3.8)

You did not know what makes a man a man, and a woman a woman? The answer is: the sexual organs. Is there anyone here who dislikes them? If you like them, how much do you like them? Even if you hitherto disdained them, you should henceforth esteem them. What will the world be like in the future? If it is a world that absolutely values the

sexual organs. Will that world be good or bad? Will it prosper or perish? This is not a joke. When God was creating human beings, into which part did He invest the greatest creative effort? Would it be the eyes, the nose, the heart or the brain? Do not all these organs eventually die? What is the purpose of the Family Federation for World Peace? If there were a world inhabited by people who transcend all fields including morality and religion, whose sexual organs are harmonized into oneness so as to earn God's welcoming praise, what kind of world would it be?

When men and women are born, who do their sexual organs belong to? The owner of the husband's organ is the wife, and vice versa. You have been ignorant of the fact that the owners of the sexual organs were interchanged. This simple truth is undeniable and will remain unchanging throughout history forever to come. (279-244, 1996.9.15)

Where on earth is that place which harbors God's love? You should know that it is in the male and female organs. The original love organs, that have nothing to do with the Fall, are the most holy place. Humankind has been ignorant of this shocking fact, that, due to the Fall, this palace, this spring, which should have inherited the most precious lineage of the imperial prince of heaven, inherited instead the bloodline of Satan, God's enemy. (134-185, 1985.4.7)

Through the sexual organs man and woman make love. Yet, God wisely inter-

changed these love organs, one with the other, so that they could not be apart even if they wanted to. Even when they are separated, one needs to return to the other, having nowhere else to go, and no place else to rest. Only by taking one's counterpart along can one harmonize and be welcomed wherever one goes in heaven and earth. (148-290, 1986.10.25)

### 4.3. True love can digest even the unclean

Do you all know into which part of the body God invested His greatest creative effort? It is the sexual organ. The term sexual organ does not signify a reproduction machine. It is the most precious part of all, but it lies beside the most unclean part. Are you aware of that? Is the urethra found in the same place or not? It is in the same place. This is true for both man and woman. Why were they created that way? Even the best of seeds needs to be fertilized to take root and grow well. The greater the value of something, the more fertilizer it needs to continually receive.

Human beings continue to grow. They are growing as if they want to occupy even God Himself, and for this reason they are given manure throughout their lives. Should you find that dirty or be grateful for it? When you think of it alone, it is horrendous, is it not? Then why is it lying right there next to your organ? Every morning that organ needs to smell the odor coming from it, and it gets wet each time you urinate. What is this all about? Such are the principles of

heaven and earth. (261-170, 1994.6.9)

When you actually stop to think about it, you thought that treasures were stored up there in heaven. But it turns out that you had treasures all along in your bodies. You came to understand that the original palace is a part of your body. Aren't the love organs the original palace that can attend God? Where is the pathway that makes the love connection? Is it in the fingertips? Where is it? What is it in a man? What is it in a woman? It is the male and female organs, where the most distasteful substance can also be found. Where does urine come out? From the sexual organ. This is the case for both women and men. If that unclean urine thus excreted were to mingle with love, would it still be unclean or would it become clean? Then how wonderful would it be to drink urine steeped in true love like iced tea! (178-125, 1988.6.1)

Love harmonizes many things. It can make a foul odor, a stench, or smell like perfume. Thus, for love nothing is unclean. Hence, God really is the King of wisdom. Our sexual organs are situated right next to the dirtiest part of our body. Declaring this as the way of harmony, He placed the male and female organs in the most unpleasant, dirtiest place. (194-49, 1989.10.15)

Where are the male and female organs? They are in the safest zone, and at the same time, the dirtiest. This goes to show that God truly is the King of wisdom. Through it, He teaches humanity,



“Love rules over even such dirty things!” The sexual organ lies close to the anus, and urine passes through that same organ. (194-175, 1989.10.22)

When making love, do you not desire the male organ to enter you? When you think about it, how dirty is that? The most sacred hole and the most unclean hole are one and the same. Is that not true? In that foul and smelly place, eternal life springs forth. This is true. When you are going to the toilet, you should think about this. You should bring to mind my words, “It is a holy place connected to true love. Everything is holy.” Never forget this. Always remember it. (293-43, 1998.5.1)

The most precious sexual organ is connected to the dirtiest part. Where does urine come out? No one ever gave a thought to this important point. If you did not know this, it would be impossible for you to be perfected. In the spring, when you are sowing seeds, do you wash that seed in water, or do you cover it with manure? You cover it with manure, dirty, stinking manure. You bury it in the ground and then stamp on it. (277-274, 1996.4.18)

Is the sexual organ located farthest from or nearest to the parts you use to urinate and defecate? Great people should be honored even in the foulest of places. The location of life needs fertilizer. It cannot be a clean place like a sandy beach. Man should taste like bean paste soup. It is all right for the wom-

an to be clean, but the man should be a little musty. Coming in from a day outside, even if his feet smelled a little, he should laugh over it. If he were too clean, not even flies would approach him. Even they would refuse to visit him. If so, then what else, be it ants or birds, would approach him? (247-323, 1993.6.1)

What is marriage? Isn't it about connecting the sexual organs together? Is that so or not? My words are not vulgar but holy. The noblest part of the human body is the sexual organ. That is where life and the ideal are passed down. It is exceedingly precious, but it lies close to the excretory organs.

What happens to the sexual organs of man and woman when they are sitting on the toilet bowl? Is it only the anus that sits on the toilet? Are they not all sitting on it? (187-70, 1989.1.6)

What is the most precious part of the human body? The sexual organ. Although that organ is most holy, what lies next to it is the dirtiest. In the case of man, urine passes out of his sexual organ. Why is this so? That is the mystery of the universe. Also, what is closest to the female organ? Is it not the anus, which she uses every morning? The same goes for urination. However, you should not think that the sexual organ is located in an absurd place. Have you ever heard of anyone accusing that part? No words should be spoken against it, and no wrong should be found in it. When you go into the spirit world, you should wish to live in the lowliest of places as

much as you would wish to live in the highest. (213-283, 1991.1.21)

What passes out of the female organ? Life. And what else? Urine, a cousin to feces, passes from it. Even I find this strange. Why on earth would anyone like that? Grandfathers and grandmothers, and even God Himself, lament that they could not obtain this love. It is amazing. What is so good about that? (295-186, 1998.8.28)

Love is precious to humankind. The love of human beings is precious, but right next to that organ of precious love is the organ that you hate the most. Which one is that? What do you urinate through? In both men and women, is that connected to the sexual organ or not? Do you not find that offensive? (263-95, 1994.8.21)

Which is better: the fingers or the head? Which is best in man? Which part of the body is the most precious in men and women? Is it not the sexual organ? How precious it is that it was created so as to be protected against unwelcome intrusions from all directions! That would not be the case if it were located where it could be touched just in passing. So it is thoroughly protected. This is the case for man as well as woman. Even if I were God, I could not have found anywhere else to put it. In creating and installing that organ, where would you have placed it in the body? Would you have put it somewhere else? If you had done that, what would happen when a

man and a woman are walking together? (199-323, 1990.2.21)

#### 4.4. Vertical and horizontal to be balanced by the sexual organs

Do not architects design with just a set square? Do they not draw up plans very easily? By the same token, with regard to the human body, where are the most important organs located? The ones found along a perpendicular drawn down the center are most important. What are they? In this physiological form of the body, which are the most important organs? The first is the nose. Try blocking your nostrils. Through them, elements essential to life pass in and out. Then further down, where would you reach? After the navel, you go further down and reach the sexual organ. Is the female organ placed upside down or laterally? I wouldn't know; it is the women who should know well. Is the male organ placed vertically? You should know about that. Everything centered on that vertical line is holy. It is connected directly to the issues of life. (196-226, 1990.1.1)

A person in whose face the lateral line (mouth-line) and the vertical line (nose-line) are straight is a person of true conscience. People in whose faces these two lines intersect at ninety degrees are conscientious people. This is the most important part. The navel should not be displaced but should instead be at the centerline, going straight up to meet the chin, and with the lips here the nose

should be straight, making a straight line to where this vein is. Those who display all these features will succeed in life. This line should also go down to meet the center of the hips. In this way, waist and hips should be perpendicular. That is how everything should look. (207-78, 1990.11.1)

Are not the eyes horizontal and the nose vertical? A vertical line extends from this vertical nose, down through the mouth and the esophagus to the stomach. Vertical and horizontal should be harmonized. If the vertical mouth or the horizontal eyes in a person's face are crooked, it changes that person's personality. The male and female organs are also harmonized with the vertical. The male organ consists of two, one vertical and the other horizontal. This represents the universe. Thus, the seed of life, the source of life comes from man. However proud American women are of themselves, they do not have baby seeds in them, do they? Even the most renowned American women could never have baby seeds in them. (243-272, 1993.1.28)

Where does this straight perpendicular line lead? To the sexual organ. That is the point the vertical line passes through, and for this reason, God desires this place. The body needs to form ninety degrees and unite right here, in this place. Until now, the minds and bodies of human beings have not been righteous. The mind is the vertical "you," and the body is the horizontal "you." Starting from where? The vertical Parent and

the horizontal parents came together to create you. You inherited true love, true life, and true lineage from them. That is how you came into being. They united in true love and brought you into this world. Therefore, you are the center of the universe, and the representative of love. You are the central being of true love, formed by the union of horizontal and vertical love. That is who you are. (217-152, 1991.5.19)

Human beings like vertical things, and for this reason they stand upright. The head is above and the sexual organ is below at the center. Men find this to be true when they stand naked before a mirror. They have hair growing right down to their sexual organs and this line should not be crooked. Women have breasts and they should also be in a line. Their hips should not be too big, but correspond with the upper part. This is nothing to laugh about. You should learn how to be moved by such things. (225-99, 1992.1.5)

Our body is shaped in such a way as to be in focus. The ears, eyes and every other part are all created to keep us focused. The mouth too is in focus centering on the nerves. Also, the navel and the sexual organ lie in a straight line at the center of our body. It is wrong to be ashamed of that. (229-241, 1992.4.12)

The focal point of the eyes is also in a straight line passing through the center. Shouldn't this centerline be in alignment with the navel and the sexu-

al organ? Thus, you have these two and they resonate with one another. The reason they were placed where they are is for them to resonate, because only when they resonate can they be conscious. (226-19, 1992.2.1)

The lips must be in focus, and the hands should also. If not, there will be trouble. No matter how big one's mouth, it needs to be in line with the nose and the navel, and the most important part further down, the sexual organ. Look at yourselves in a mirror and see if yours are in line, and learn how you should live your lives.

From childhood, people need to be taught that, because this is the way it is, they need to be aware of such aspects. There are no textbooks that teach such things. I could go on and on talking about such things. (221-227, 1991.10.25)

The eyes are not placed where they are by accident, but based on the perpendicular. It does not look good for a person to have slanted eyes. They should be perpendicular. The nose symbolizes Adam and Eve, the eyes God, and the teeth creation. There are thirty-two teeth, and four times eight is thirty-two, symbolizing the entire creation. All these visual aspects come to fruition not at the head but at the sexual organ. The sexual organ is the palace of all types of nerves. You would know this if you studied physiology. (190-130, 1989.6.18)

Why is the male part convex? Women too have a protruding part. They

look like a broken mountain range. That is how the very best place should be like. That is where the term "Blue dragon on the left and white tiger on the right," meaning the very best site situated between two mountains on the east and the west, comes from. As such, the sexual organs of love need to be perpendicular and connected to parental love through the line of love. (180-303, 1988.8.22)

Everything resembles a sphere and needs to be in motion. In the human body, the part that most resembles a sphere is the face, and among the facial features, the eyes most resemble a sphere. Next, in men, a part of the sexual organ is spherical. I have not mentioned that, so you do not need to say it. Then next, what can be found inside the body? The kidney and bladder; these are all important organs. (214-56, 1991.2.1)

Everything flows vertically, coming to fruition in the sexual organs. That is where everything is bound to come together, whether bad or good. Hence, those who use them well become people of goodness, and those who use them wrongly become the worst people. (280-97, 1996.11.11)

A person whose nose tip is not in line with the center cannot be a conscientious person. You should know this as a matter of common sense. This must be in a straight line through the navel right down to the sexual organ. Men have hair on their chests, but women do not, do they? Do women have chest hair? Hair

in men also grows in two parts, subject and object, which must become one. (248-284, 1993.10.3)

The nose tip should lie at the center, as should the navel and the sexual organ. If the line going through them is crooked, that person is ill-fated. His life will not be easy. When you look at a person, at first glance you see whether his eyes are in a straight line, and how everything else is from the shoulder down. People who walk zigzag are not good people. Though there are hundreds of people gathered here, there are no two whose manner of walking is alike; they are all different, for the way one walks displays one's personality. There are some people who walk in a strange manner. Such people should change the way they walk. Otherwise, they can never settle down anywhere. (248-88, 1993.8.1)

Doesn't the head always stand upright? It remains upright. The important parts of the human body are the head and the sexual organ. A line comes down straight, and splits right there. Thinking takes place in the head, and the husband thinks of his wife and the wife about her husband. They think centering on love, and their thoughts become one through the sexual organs. (188-44, 1989.2.16)

Are the breasts identical and in a perpendicular line? Is the navel at the center of a circle? Then the line leads right down to the sexual organ. Where does water flow? It flows downward, and where does it go? When you are work-

ing while seated, the part that gets most moist is the center of the lower part of the body. That is where you sweat the most. That is why a lot of hair grows on that part. Isn't that true for everybody? That is where all the water collects. (297-46, 1998.11.15)

Only when your nose is well-formed can you become rich. Do you understand that? A glance should tell you that it is dead center. The line from it to the sexual organ, passing through the navel should be straight. If it is crooked, your spouse will waver. So when getting married, you should both undress and see whether your navels, chests, and all other parts are in line, for only then can the couple be ideal. There are some people whose sexual organs are crooked. In the case of the woman, too, if her breasts tilt to one side and do not correspond, then she will be a playgirl, or will be widowed and die alone. That is how these principles of creation work. (295-30, 1998.8.16)

The most important parts of the human body are the eyes. They are most precious. Next is the heart. The heart too is spherical. Also, in a woman, the womb is spherical. Then how about the man: is not his sexual organ spherical as well? What is spherical is precious. Women do not have bones jutting out. Since women's bones do not show and their bodies are rounded out with flesh, artists like to draw nude women. (272-154, 1995.10.1)

Starting from the face, the navel and the sexual organ should all be in a

straight line. Go ahead and get a checkup of your body in a hospital. When walking, the weight transferred to the center should be the same, and so the soles of your shoes should wear out evenly. If you were to look at a person's shoes, and see that one is more worn out than the other, he may not be a good person. The person whose shoes wear out evenly would be an enlightened person. (286-219, 1997.8.11)

When reading a person's physiognomy, you should see how the line descends from here. Only when this line comes down vertically to the sexual organ can that person be said to be a person of conscience. If it does not, then things would get difficult. The breasts should not tilt to one side, and it is also not good to have the navel off center. (252-108, 1993.11.14)

When sitting, sit up straight. When walking, walk upright. When you look at how people walk, you see there are all types. Even where there are thousands of people, their gaits will all be different. When walking, the top of your head should be in a vertical line with your sexual organ at all times. All organs in your body should be set in motion centering on the vertical. Then God would look at it and say, "Wow! That man and woman are walking the way I want," and take interest, and so would the spirit world. (246-237, 1993.4.18)

When looking at a person, from the top of the head, don't your eyes come straight down to the nose? That line passes through the nose, the median

line of the upper lip, the lips, the navel, and finally reaches the sexual organ. Based on this vertical line, you check to see how the eyes are placed, whether they are in line horizontally. You also see the ears, the shoulders, and if that person walks straight or not. Thus, even in something like walking, you should not walk thoughtlessly, for a person's gait symbolizes his life. (246-235, 1993.4.18)

When closely examining any human being, what are the most important parts of the body? Those that are close to being spherical in shape are precious. In this regard, the eyes and heart and sexual organ are precious in a man. In the male sexual organ two eye-like features can be found. Men have those, but women do not. They are precious. Are not the eyes precious? They symbolize God. The heart symbolizes life, and the sexual organ love. The head is the supervising organ centered on God. (249-173, 1993.10.10)

#### 4.5. Love is not known through being taught

There are no creatures in this world that do not teach love. Animals, even the smallest insects which are so invisible to the naked eye that when you hold them in your hand you can scarcely see them, they all have five senses. When you think about this, you see that they must, because even among them, males and females have to find each other. What causes these males and females to unite? What is their focal point? Isn't it love?

That is undeniable. (223-268, 1991.11.12)

Sex education is unnecessary. People talk of free sex and sex education, but I say, “You crazy fools, stop!” Is there sex education in the animal kingdom? When they are next to each other, they fit together naturally. Some animal has its sexual organ under its shoulder, and its mate fits its own sexual organ into it, though the latter may have it on its heel. They are meant to fit together automatically. Are the magnets forced to match their poles with the North Pole and the South Pole, or do they do so automatically? They find the poles automatically. Once your mind and body are ready to be in tune with true love, if you let yourself, you will automatically find the direction, north, south, east or west, and fit yourself in.

In mating, how do animals fit their sexual organs together? Are the organs bigger than the rest of the body or smaller? Though they are smaller, they pull along the rest of the body in order to mate. In other words, the rest of the body is pulled along by love. Do you think the body is pulled along forcibly or willingly? The body lets itself be pulled willingly. We are meant to enter heaven automatically. (272-91, 1995.8.30)

Sexual organs in animals, both male and female, can be found anywhere on the body, even under the shoulder. Then how do they fit them together? Do they need to be taught? Do they need to learn how to fit them together? Even though they are not taught, by rubbing them-

selves on each other, they are bound to fit together in the end. There is sex education these days to teach this, but that is all Satan’s doing, for there is no need to teach this. (284-122, 1997.4.16)

Nowadays it is said that even germs exist as couples. If you were to examine them under a microscope three million times magnified, could you tell whether the male germs have eyes or not? How about noses? Ears? Mouths? Sexual organs? Even something microscopic like that knows how to fit its sexual organ into its mate’s. Would it have to be taught how to do so? Is there any mother or father who, when their daughter is about to get married, teaches her, “This is how you should fit your sexual organ together with your spouse’s”? The organs are bound to come together with natural motions. It is a natural union, not a forced one. People harmonize when they are united. It is all about unity. (272-74, 1995.8.30)

Why did God create the male and female organs like they are? The universe possesses much content in educating about love, showing how animals love each other. Among animals, there are many deserving our respect. (180-336, 1988.10.5)

Isn’t there conflict between teachers and students in schools nowadays? It is because they do not know about how love is for the sake of others. They have failed to teach the fundamentals of heavenly principles. Those who serve others



more can receive and control greater love. In love there are rights of inheritance, participation and cohabitation. Isn't love like that? Could you place a gold nugget before your beloved wife and tell her, "This is mine," and then let her only have your body and say, "Since what you like is love, you can only have my genitals"? Is that love? It's not. Love means being willing to give all things, even one's sons and daughters, body and soul. (204-41, 1990.6.29)

### Section 5. The Sexual Organs Are the Crossroads to Heaven or Hell

When the sexual organs are sanctified, they can be connected to heaven. Their importance should be taught from elementary school. The goals pursued by man and woman are the sexual organs of love. They are shaped as concave and convex for love. Why were the genitals shaped differently? For the sake of love. Which love is it for? It is for true love, God's eternal and unchanging love. (278-271, 1996.5.26)

You need to know that the sexual organs were the dividing point between heaven and hell. If you use them wrongfully, you are bound for hell, and if you use them rightfully, you will automatically reach heaven. There is only one starting point, not two. This shows the importance of lovemaking. When all women and men return home and say, "Now I know the truth. Let's put it into practice henceforth. It is the basis of

hope for our family," then universal liberation will take place.

The conclusion is that, in conjunction with the universal proclamation, we should understand its contents and preserve the sanctity of the sexual organs. The mother, Eve, fell. Next, Cain wrought havoc. Abel also played a part in this. That is why the Unification Church created a global organization representing the mother. (278-209, 1996.5.24)

Where did heaven and hell begin? Where did they begin? In midair? Where? At the sexual organs. This must be serious. They have turned heaven and earth upside down. Can anyone deny that? There is no way to deny the logic of The Fall in Rev. Moon's Divine Principle. Ask God. Examine everything. Not having received any answers from that, you would not be able to oppose what I have arranged in systematic order including theories and contents that you could never imagine even in your dreams. (279-118, 1996.8.1)

How can you end up going to the most terrible part of hell? If you use your sexual organ in a way that violates heavenly law, you are bound for hell, whereas if you go the opposite way, that is, the path of God's absolute love, you will go to a higher place in heaven. This conclusion is only too clear. (279-121, 1996.8.1)

Due to the Fall, the male and female organs became evil things because they became the original palace that opened the gates to the evil wave of death, the

laws of death, the hell of destruction, and the wicked objects that violated the laws of heaven. This was the secret hidden in history until now. (197-175, 1990.1.13)

The sexual organs must be liberated. Thus, absolute sex is the opposite to the free sex of today. It is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal sex. How lofty and precious are these four concepts! If the two organs remain separate as they are, no development can take place. They must be rooted in true love. True love begins from there. (279-239, 1996.9.8)

In today's satanic world, the sexual organs have ruined everything. Free sex, homosexuality and drugs are reigning supreme. Drugs make you lose your senses. They make you like animals, not human beings. They make you think nothing but animalistic thoughts. The Kingdom of Heaven, on the other hand, is diametrically opposite to this. It follows the concept, not of free sex, but of absolute, eternal, unchanging and unique love. They connect to the Kingdom of Heaven instantaneously. When such a foundation is laid on earth, it will become God's Kingdom on earth. This is the undeniable logical conclusion. You should exercise great care toward the foundation of love. (278-271, 1996.5.26)

The sexual organs were misused. A revolution is needed here. For that you need the Mother and the Father. Women are to be mobilized with Mother as the leader. Mobilizing the Women's Federation settles Mother's position. Is that

not where the returning Lord appears? What would the Messiah bring with him? Absolute sex. He is coming for the perfection of absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal sex. (279-269, 1996.9.22)

What part do women look at first in a man? Is it the eyes, the hands, or where? The question is where you look when you look at a man. The eyes? Then what? The face, then what's next? Lower down, where are all five senses drawn to? Which organ is most evil? Throughout history, the sexual organs came to be regarded as most evil. Think about it.

The starting points of heaven and hell lead in diametrically opposite directions. Until now, humankind was ignorant of how the true sexual organ is the starting point to heaven, and the false sexual organ leads to hell. That is the sexual organ. Misusing the genitals leads to hell, and the rightful use of love leads to heaven. It is simple. (278-269, 1996.5.26)

Where can absolute love be found? In kissing? The question is where absolute love can be found. Absolute love comes about by means of absolute sexual organs; without them, it cannot be found. Where can you find absolute love? Is it from kissing, seeing, hearing and touching? You can only find it in sexual intercourse. This was hitherto unknown. People did not know the place where eternal love and sex settle. They did not know where its starting point was. Those of you without sexual organs, raise your hands. All of you have them. What are they for? If you were to

pose this question to them, the sexual organs would answer, "It is our last wish for us two to come together firmly to fulfill absolute love." Then, do you want to have absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal sexual organs? The question is whether you have them. (279-220, 1996.9.8)

Whose are the sexual organs? Are they yours? They belong to your spouses. You did not know this simple truth. The yin-yang principle of this universe is that of male and female. Even in the mineral world the subject-object relationship can be found; nowadays it is even said that there are male and female bacteria. In short, the entire universe exists in a pair system. Under the concept of love, each subject partner was born for its object partner, and vice versa. Why were they born? It was for love, to perfect love. You must understand that since God created Adam and Eve, man and woman, and intended to marry them when they were fully matured, the sexual organs that would have been brought together in intercourse on their wedding were to become the absolute and central organs for the planting of absolute life, love and lineage. (280-62, 1996.11.1)

What is the Fall? What is the fundamental problem, what are the fundamentals? It is that Adam and Eve considered their sexual organs to belong to themselves and acted freely. Had they reached full maturity centering on God, Adam's was to belong to Eve and Eve's to Adam, and through them they were to lay the foundation of absolute love with

the eternal God. However, they were unfaithful and instead made the organs their own. Hence, that foundation was completely destroyed. Those who live for themselves are bound for hell, and those who live for their spouses are bound for heaven. This is where the crossroads are. The sexual organs are the boundary between hell and heaven. You must know this. (280-63, 1996.11.1)

God's ideal of creation is to establish absolute couples. Absolute couples are established when they live, not for themselves but for each other, based on the absolute sexual organs. They came into being for the creation. Each was created for the sake of the other, not for themselves. Men were endowed with sexual organs for the sake of women. The female organs exist for the sake of men. They were created for the men. Those who use their sexual organs according to Satan's desires, and do not follow the way of the Principle will go to hell. On the other hand, if you live for the sake of others centering on absolute love, you will enter God's dominion. You will become members of the imperial household of heaven. (280-70, 1996.11.1)

Let us discover the dividing line between heaven and hell. Would it be in midair? Where would it be? It lies in the sexual organs. This is a serious matter. The sexual organs have turned heaven and earth upside down. Who can deny this? It is all explained in the chapter on the Fall in the Divine Principle, taught by Rev. Moon. If you doubt this, ask

God. You will not be able to oppose Rev. Moon's Divine Principle, arranged in systematic order with theories and contents that you could never imagine even in your dreams. Those who use their sexual organs aimlessly, like a blind person who is wandering here and there because he has lost his way, are bound for hell. Conversely, those who use their sexual organs according to God's standard of absolute love will go to a higher place in heaven. This is the clear conclusion. (279-256, 1996.9.15)

Due to the Fall, evil ancestors came to exist alongside the good Ancestor, who was unable to have descendants. Nevertheless, Satan cannot ignore God, the great Superintendent of heaven and earth. Whenever he desires to carry out some act, he needs to get clearance from the God of goodness. Evil deeds break down God's ideal world. They bring destruction to the world of love. Ultimately, they would completely destroy the sexual organs, the basis for God's ideal of love. (287-32, 1997. 8.10)

Which part did humankind use to become part of Satan's lineage? Was it through kissing? It was through love-making. Where is that place, that starting point? It is the sexual organs. You must know that, from God's point of view, the sexual organs are truly fearful organs. (304-11, 1999.9.5)

To what end did God make the male and female organs concave and convex? Can convex tie the knot with another

convex? Can two concaves come together in marriage? My goodness, the crazy scoundrels! Such people will come to ruin in one generation. Those who emphasize celibacy will find themselves headed in the opposite direction from the Kingdom of Heaven when they have passed on to the next world. (304-241, 1999.11.8)

When Jacob left his uncle Laban's house after living there for twenty-one years, he stole the idols most loved by Laban's family. If his deed had been found out, he would have been in serious trouble. So what he did was to grind it into powder and eat it. Did you know about that?

Do you know how pained God is by the sin of man with woman? The question arises as to how to manage this and turn God's original heart back to us by getting to the point where there is no longer any satanic foundation in us. Isn't celibacy taught in the religious sphere? Men and women are taught to live as if their sexual organs had been done away with. It is the same for you. So who can commit the fall? In an instant, that act ensnared the great eternal King of heaven and earth so that He could not be liberated. In order to reverse this, Unification Church members receive the Blessing. Do you think they can repeat the Fall? Is that possible? (296-204, 1998.11.9)

In South America, I talked for two hours about the sexual organs to a religious leader whose followers number a hundred thousand. Well, he rolled his

eyes and said in conclusion, “You are an expert on sexual organs!” It is lamentable that grandfathers failed to become experts on sexual organs. Since grandmothers failed to become experts on sexual organs, families were divided. Since parents failed to become experts, families are in turmoil, and since husbands and wives failed to become experts, they are always fighting. Once you become an expert, you can put heaven and earth in your pocket. (302-170, 1999.6.13)

You are bound to be punished if you use your love organs recklessly. They are the palace of love and the ancestral garden of love. Love began there. The origin of God’s Kingdom on earth and in heaven, and the origin of the beginning of God’s happiness are molded there. God’s laughter begins from there. That is where God can find love at last and dance for joy. We must seek this place. (256-199, 1994.3.13)

The place where two lives come together as one centered on love and the place where the blood of man and woman become one is the sexual organ. You should know that this place is more precious than your sons and daughters, your spouse and even God. It is a place that is more precious than your children, spouse, and even parents. If sexual

organs did not exist, parents, husbands and wives, and sons and daughters would be of no value.

Since this place is that precious, it is kept under lock and key away from other eyes during your lifetime as the treasure of treasures. Furthermore, the key that can unlock man’s organ is owned by woman, and hers by him. There is only one key for each person. There should be only one key per person. Do you want to possess ten, twenty keys as in the case of free sex? Do you want to become like an unoccupied derelict house with its doors open wide, where anyone can come in and go out? (280-199, 1997.1.1)

You should attend and love the sexual organs more than you do God, for only then would He rejoice. Where on earth would you hear such words? If religious people heard them, they would jump and fall down in shock, but this is the plain truth. Only when you attend the love organs more than you do God can the foundation on which God can settle be laid. It is more precious than life, and you cannot exchange it for the world, the universe, and even God. Only when you worship, love, and recognize the value of your spouse’s sexual organ more than you do all God’s creation put together, will God come to reside in your homes. (325-211, 2000.7.1)

## CHAPTER THREE

# The Human Fall and Restoration

### Section 1. The Internal Significance of the Fall

#### 1.1. The Fall was a misuse of love

My having closely investigated the historical details of the original sin and the Fall has revealed the illicit love relationship that took place between the archangel and the very first human family. In the Divine Principle, Satan is a real spiritual being, not merely a conceptual or an imaginary being. He is the being who destroyed God's ideal of love, and changed God's lineage into one centered on himself. In chapter eight of the Gospel of John, Jesus states clearly that the father of humankind is the devil.

The adulterer of love who deprived God of His ideal of love, which God intended to realize through Adam and Eve as His external body, is indeed the devil, Satan. This may not sound familiar to you; however, this is the conclusion that I have reached as a result of searching the spirit world in order to investigate the fundamental problems of the universe. That quest was a tremendous struggle of blood and sweat. If all of you would pray in earnest, you would be able to receive an answer about this.

(135-12, 1985.8.20)

No deviation from the fundamentals of the universe should ever be possible. Yet the devil did this while Eve was still underage, before reaching maturity. When they turn fifteen or sixteen, girls fall when in their teens, don't they? It was right at that time. At the time when Eve had observed Lucifer for a while, he sounded as if he knew all of the truths of heaven and earth. He was a messenger for God and could speak about the creation of heaven and earth. Meanwhile, Adam said little and it was the time when he went around trying to catch baby birds. Aren't boys like that? As he went around catching baby birds and frogs, or baby snakes with a stick, using everything he learnt from nature in this way to have dominion in managing and befriending them and trying to adapt to them completely, would he have had any interest in Eve then? (191-97, 1989.6.24)

What is the Fall? The standard of the great laws of heaven, the original axis of love and the central axis of heaven and earth, were destroyed by the Fall. Humankind did not know the infuriating fact that because the woman and the archangel were awakened to the desire for love, they had a relationship which shattered the very fundamentals

of the universe, giving rise to the abyss of anguish.

Who had to dissolve this anguish over the fact that Satan became the lineal ancestor of humankind? What the Fall amounted to was that the servant trampled on the person who was to become the queen. Hence, the original standard which should have become the fundamental principle of the laws of the universe was destroyed. Ultimately, who is this devil? He is the chief culprit who fundamentally destroyed the palace of the heavenly kingdom of love. (171-114, 1987.12.13)

Why are indemnification, the restoration of the right of parents, the right of the eldest son, and the right of kingship needed? The root problem is Satan's love, life and lineage. Although these should have started from God originally, centered on true love, they started from the devil instead, which is something incredible. The universe came into being because of love. Didn't the Creation begin from love? All beings were created centered on God's orderly love as their origin. Those fundamentals were overturned by Satan, then turned upright once again. (206-236, 1990.10.14)

Humankind has undergone a history of struggle, but why? It is a history of the struggle between good and evil. The devil usurped all rights of God's ideal world. What he did was none other than an act of usurpation of God's creation. He seized the woman and the children who were to be the center of the entire

universe.

Thus, God has no woman. He has no children born through a woman. Originally, that would be impossible. The original woman is God's woman, and the children born from her should be His, but the devil took them away. This happened through the fall of minors. Without this logic, we cannot make people understand their fundamental origin. (262-74, 1994.7.23)

People were born because of love, but how did love lose its value? That would not be possible other than through an act that contravened love. What was the consequence of the Fall? Women and men were born for the sake of each other, but rather than their fulfilling each other's love, tragically, it became the reverse. Everything that was decided by self-interest brought about the results of the Fall. Things went in the diametrically opposite direction of what God had created.

It is stated in the Bible that Adam and Eve took and ate of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and thereby fell. Yet fundamentally, in the position of being born due to love, just the fact alone of eating a literal fruit is not enough to destroy the foundation of altruistic love. We cannot deny our origin of being born because of love. It was not the altruistic love in which man and woman were created to be intertwined, but rather the egocentric love in which they became enmeshed that constituted the Fall.

All things God created are in a pair



system, born for mutual coexistence. Human beings were also created to enter a world of such values, but they went in the diametrically opposite direction self-centeredness, and that was the Fall. Upon what was the Fall centered? The act of destruction took place through misuse of the love organs, which both woman and man value most. (243-269, 1993.1.28)

Who is God and who is the devil? The devil is God's enemy. He is the adulterer of love. This was revealed by Rev. Moon. The fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of good and evil which became the cause of the Fall of the ancestors of humankind is the human sexual organ. If it is used rightfully, a nation prospers; but if it is misused, a nation is ruined. This is the meaning of "the fruit of good and evil". Even with a king, if he uses his love rightfully, his kingdom prospers; but if he misuses it, his kingdom is ruined. Through misused love, families and societies are destroyed, and everything is divided between heaven and hell. Where the fruit of good should have been borne, the fruit of evil was borne instead.

What is the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of good and evil? It is not any literal fruit. It is something everyone has. The human sexual organs are that fruit. They can be seen as the head of a poisonous snake. Why did Jesus call Satan a viper? Why was Satan called a serpent? The sexual organ can be compared with the head of a snake, the head of a serpent. Don't all women and men

pursue it? (227-251, 1992.2.14)

What is the most precious part of the body for people? What is the most precious thing for men and women? Woman became woman centered on and by virtue of one thing. Which place is that one place? It is the sexual organ, the organ of love, the organ that implants life. What a good name that is! Isn't it the sexual organ? It sounds more real than calling it the love organ. It is self-explanatory. The tool that implants life is the sexual organ. Don't be ashamed of the sexual organ. What is the sexual organ in Korean? What do you call it in Korean? Those who are embarrassed to say it are living with shame. If you are embarrassed to say it in Korean itself, you don't qualify as Koreans. Shouldn't you be proud of it! (260-73, 1994.4.11)

If God the Creator wished that His object partners be millions of times more outstanding than Himself, why did He create human beings so that they could fall? This is the question. God did not create them to fall. He warned them not to fall, "Do not eat of the fruit of good and evil!" What is this fruit? It refers to the female organ. Women are weak. When our first ancestors lived in the Garden of Eden, they were naked. (262-74, 1994.7.23)

God gave the command, "Do not eat of the fruit of good and evil!" Do you know what that fruit is? It is the female organ. You might say, "Who's ever heard of anything like that?" but Eve was

always saying, “Big brother, where are you? I’m lonely! and it was Eve that the archangel violated. He had the responsibility to protect and raise Adam and Eve up until they were married.

Thus, the angels also lived without any clothing. Clothing came into being after the Fall. Do animals wear clothes? Do they cover their sexual organs with something? Are husband and wife embarrassed with each other? Is it embarrassing for a couple living together to undress in front of each other? (262-150, 1994.7.23)

What was the Fall? It was the misuse of the sexual organs, which resulted in Adam, the groom and love partner of Eve, changing. Thus, it was a fundamental fall. This transgression was so grave a mistake that Adam and Eve could not stand before the animal, plant or mineral worlds, or anywhere in the human world – or even before the world of mice or insects. Thus, they had to be chased out of the universe. That is why they were driven out from Eden. (279-215, 1996.9.8)

The Fall of Adam and Eve originates in their going against the iron rule: their sexual organs did not belong to themselves. Think about it. Would God drive Adam and Eve away just because they ate a literal fruit? God is not such a senseless being. He chased them out because they made a fundamental error and therefore could not be acknowledged anywhere in the universe. Adam and Eve did not understand that the males and females in the mineral, plant and animal worlds

reserve their sexual organs for the sake of their partner in love. (279-246, 1996.9.15)

Adam and Eve transgressed against the Commandment. They should have had absolute sexual organs, absolute love, lived absolutely for the sake of others, and been absolutely obedient. God had desired a foundation of altruistic love, yet they behaved as they pleased, self-centeredly; hence, the whole universe spat on them. That foundation, which was lost by the false parents, had to be restored through the coming of the True Parents. (280-77, 1996.11.1)

Man’s most fearful enemy is woman. Women have become like serpents with their mouths open, waiting to bite if the male organ enters. This has spread everywhere, and will pass to the next generation. Thus, the most fearful thing of all is the sexual organ. (281-215, 1997.2.13)

Love was lost in Eden. We must repent. With tears, we must cry out in grief hundreds of times more than when God, Adam and Eve grieved at their parting in Eden. Tears, mucus and saliva – all three should run down past the belly button and fall off those sexual organs. Those scoundrels that sinned!

Adam and Eve were created, but for what? As man was lonely, God created woman for him and said she was good, but based on what would she be considered good? What part of the woman? The sexual organ! They are the concave meeting the convex. God created the concave for the convex. Adam is Adam,

but for what was Eve created? For her eyes, nose, face? What part of Eve was created for Adam? God created the concave for the convex. The source of love is found with Adam and Eve and God created them. We must know that these sexual organs are most valuable, the origin of love. (294-270, 1998.8.5)

From now on, the fundamentals must be revealed: facts such as what God is like, what the creation of heaven and earth was like, what our first ancestors were like, how humankind, starting with families developed into societies, nations and the world. As all this was negated by the Fall, it must be reconstructed and argued logically until people acknowledge, "Yes, that's right." Individuals, families, tribes, people, nations, the cosmos and even God must be liberated. This serious problem was the problem of the misuse of love within Adam's family, and the fact that the two – man and woman – brought their sexual organs together in tragic error, thus shaking heaven and earth.

The sexual organ is created to be the principal royal palace of love. Without it, love and life will not come into existence, and the lineage will not continue. If these things are denied, everything will disappear in one generation. As God would not be able to tolerate this loss, He had to permit it, and I must therefore take responsibility over creation and make Satan surrender naturally, not by striking him. (300-236, 1999.3.23)

My responsibility in perfecting

Adam is that I must restore the position of the king of liberated cosmic love that is untainted by the Fall. I must bear full responsibility for Satan's entire lineage. Humiliation, my own dignity, or even my reputation is not the issue. I must be prepared to put my precious sexual organ even into dog's dung. Unless I go through such things that cannot ever be imagined, I cannot restore women. Since I cannot bear the thought of that, I can say, "Let's create a new heaven and earth."

We can create a new universe attending God. How grievous it is for God that He cannot take measures against the archangel Satan who destroyed the order of love! When considering the woman's sexual organ, one should think, "So this is the pit that has imprisoned even God for tens of millions of years!" When considering the man's sexual organ, one should think that way, too. Thinking of the reality that heaven was turned upside down just because Eve said "Let's do it," should make a chill go down your spine. (302-257, 1999.6.14)

When there was a single female among five males (God, Adam, and three archangels), did God feel easy or uneasy about it? If you were God, how would you have felt? Then, whom would you have guarded most closely? The single woman, Eve. She was God's future partner, the body of God Himself, the partner of love closest to Him. When a command is given, it is given to the closest person. When leaving your house, do you give orders to the person closest to

or farthest from you? You would give the order to the person closest to you, and that is why God said, “Do not eat of the fruit of good and evil” to Eve. What is that fruit? It refers to the female organ. A woman who marries a good man will give birth to good children, but one who marries a gangster will give birth to children of a gangster as the fruit. (281-195, 1997.2.13)

When God invested and invested, centered on love, His love enveloped the entire universe and there was still more left over. Centered on God who is the motive of love, centered on this core, all corners of this existing world in the universe were enveloped in the atmosphere of love. Thus, there is the atmosphere of love even if you go to the spirit world. On earth, we should have led our lives singing of love centered on the pair system; but due to the Fall, this miserable state came about. We must understand this fact and know about the Fall. (209-222, 1990.11.29)

## 1.2. The fruit of good and evil is Eve's sexual organ

Eve is a woman, but what are the fundamentals of woman? What is the core of that being that is good to see? The eyes? The face? The hands? What part of the body? It is nothing other than the sexual organ. Woman is concave and man is convex. God made Adam who is convex, and then created for him that which is concave, namely woman. Why did God create Eve in front of Adam and call it

good? From the perspective of God's love, a way emerged that enabled the fulfillment of that love. Hence, it was good for God, for Adam and for Eve. God thus spoke out of love. What are those words referring to? God was referring to the sexual organs. You must not think of this as strange. (294-293, 1998.8.9)

In the Garden of Eden, God commanded Adam and Eve not to eat the fruit of good and evil. That fruit refers to the female organ. A woman who marries a king will give birth to princes and princesses, but one who marries a Mafioso will give birth to children of the Mafia. It is the woman who can bear the fruit of either good or evil. She can stand together with her husband in his position. Even if she did not complete her elementary education, if she became a president's wife through a love relationship, she can stand in the same position with him. (279-316, 1996.11.10)

God said, “Don't eat it,” but what was He referring to? The tree of life and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil in the Garden of Eden refer to Adam and Eve. Isn't the tree of life Adam? Adam's sexual organ is the tree of life. Is that correct or not? What is the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? It refers to Eve's love. It is just the same as bearing the fruit of the children of the Mafia if she loved a Mafioso. If she loved a king, she would bear the fruit of his children. Thus, humankind inherited the devil's lineage. (275-218, 1995.12.30)

In the Bible it says that Adam and Eve could eat the fruit of any of the trees in the Garden of Eden, but that they should not touch or even look at the tree of life and the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil in the center of the garden. As Adam and Eve were brother and sister, they could hold hands, or kiss, and they could eat the fruits of any tree except the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and the tree of life; God said that the male and female sexual organs should not meet. That is how He warned them. (200-50, 1990.2.23)

For what purpose did God create the universe? I spoke of it being based on the pair system, didn't I? For what purpose? It is for love. What kind of love is God's love? We must understand about true love. What is true love? What is the motivation for God creating heaven and earth? Did Adam and Eve fall by literally eating the fruit of good and evil? Don't talk nonsense. What is that fruit? People do not know what the fruit of good and evil is. They don't know the origin, the root of sin. Without knowing this, how can they cure their illness? Can diseased people enter heaven? They cannot. Their kind of logic will not work. (209-214, 1990.11.29)

Considering those present in the Garden of Eden, only one of them was female. There was one woman, but there were three archangels, there was Adam, and God is also masculine. Besides God, four males surrounded one woman, so she was indeed the one who had

to be most closely guarded. The fruit of good and evil refers to the female sexual organ. (272-297, 1995.10.13)

Where did the Fall begin? From the sexual organ, the royal palace of love and life. Isn't that so? It was the sexual organ through which a king's lineage was to be inherited, the most valuable thing. Due to the Fall, however, it became the dirtiest place. It is the same with any nation. That is the situation. Is it a sacred thing centered on God, or is it a base thing of sin and evil? It is not the Ark of the Covenant that Moses made, but the Holy of Holies that God created. The place God created as the most holy place is the sexual organ, which occupied that position before the Fall took place. People don't understand anything about the Fall. Isn't that in the Divine Principle? (216-107, 1991.3.9)

God commanded Adam and Eve not to eat the fruit of good and evil in the Garden of Eden. What is that fruit? It came from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Whose sexual organ is that? It signifies the female organ. If a woman lives with a gangster, she will bear his child, and if she lives with a king, she will bear a royal child. Hence, she can bear either the fruit of goodness or that of evil. The fruit of good and evil refers to the female organ. Do you understand what it means not to eat of the fruit of good and evil? God intended to elevate Eve as His object partner of love in the future, but there were many males. How many were there? Four

besides God Himself (Adam plus the three archangels).

So what kind of warning did God give Eve? He said, “Do not make love!” Did He say, “Eat the fruit of good and evil” or did he say “Do not eat it”? What was that? It was the female sexual organ. What kind of thing was there to warn and to give a command and instruction about? Was there literally a fruit called the fruit of good and evil? Would those in the garden have been interested in a literal fruit of good and evil or a woman? I don’t know. You should all know better than me. Discoverers do not have the rights of ownership. (285-190, 1997.5.4)

Adam and Eve fell, but through what? They fell through love, wrongful love. Where then did this wrongful love start? Wrongful love started through the misuse of the sexual organ. This is the formula: if Adam and Eve did not have sexual organs, would humankind have been born? Without sexual organs, would God’s Kingdom on earth be able to start? God’s true good kingdom on earth and in heaven comes into being and develops through perfectly true and good sexual organs. What happens through untrue sexual organs? Hell comes into being through their misuse. (279-213, 1996.9.8)

Adam and Eve united centered on fallen love, bringing about grievous ruin, and made love the most obscene word. The part into which God devoted his utmost creative efforts was the sexual organ. He invested the greatest

devotion there. It is where the source of all life is gathered, the integration point of all things ideal and related to the senses, and thus the principal palace of love. Love was to start from that point. Had Adam and Eve not fallen, true life would have originated from there. It was the principal palace of true love, true life and true lineage. Don’t we have the word ja-goong (meaning womb, the Chinese characters for ja and goong meaning child and palace respectively)? Through where is the womb connected? Isn’t it through the woman’s sexual part? Through love, the flesh and blood of a man and woman are blended and their lives become one. (253-40, 1994.1.1)

The Fall ruined everything and changed the sexual organs into the worst things. God could not embrace them. Is there anyone who would deny that? The most precious royal palace became a palace of dirty love, life, and lineage. I am talking about the sexual organs. (253-40, 1994.1.1)

Since the Fall originated from love, humankind lost true love. As God drove out Adam and Eve before they had their baby, that child had no relationship with Him. The fallen ancestors of humanity appeared. We must understand their error. (287-16, 1997.8.10)

Depending on the kind of man a woman sleeps with, the result can be good or evil. If she sleeps with a thief, she will bear the child of a thief. Thus, we speak of the tree of the knowledge

of good and evil. It is a tree that knows things can become good or evil. The Bible likens human beings to trees. Don't all women have that kind of character? Be careful. God gave a warning in the Garden of Eden and it is the same today. (258-183, 1994.3.17)

The fruit of good and evil refers to Eve's sexual organ. It means that the seed varies according to the husband a woman has. If she meets a good man, she will bear good fruit, but if she meets an evil man, she will bear evil fruit. The principal palace where she can do this is her sexual organ. Isn't woman a field? If a thief came and sowed his seed, a thief's child would emerge, but if a prince did that, a royal child would emerge. (238-199, 1992.11.22)

The place where human beings committed sin is their sexual organs, where love originally starts. (229-7, 1992.4.9)

What is the fruit of good and evil? If a woman finds a good husband, she will bear a good baby. If she finds a bad husband, she will have a bad baby. I came to know that the fruit of good and evil was a term referring to that part of a woman. What is that in women? Virgins are sensitive about their breasts, but it is actually referring to the female organs. Yet in the case of a man, even if a bad woman became his partner, he wouldn't become evil and if a good woman became his partner, wouldn't he become even better? (221-315, 1991.10.27)

As women mature earlier, they have a greater predisposition to fall than men; therefore, God gave the warning not to eat the fruit of good and evil. If the sexual organ of a woman meets a good person, a good fruit will emerge, and if it meets an evil man, an evil fruit will emerge. The fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil refers to the woman's sexual organ. Do men ever give birth? That will never happen to a man. (221-282, 1991.10.26)

What is the fruit of good and evil? It becomes good if you enter into a relationship with a good man: if you marry a king, you'll give birth to a prince, but if you marry a gangster boss, you'll give birth to a future gangster boss. That is what the fruit of good and evil is: the thing that is able to bear the fruit of good or evil is the female sexual organ. It must not be violated. Even in Korean, when referring to a virgin being violated, don't they say, "grabbed and eaten"? It is insightful. Do not grab and eat! (284-137, 1997.4.16)

Through what did the Fall occur? The eyes? The nose? The mouth? The hands? The ears? No. It occurred through the sexual organs. Through false love, Adam and Eve became false parents and then false life, love, lineage, and conscience came to exist through them. They became one with Satan instead of with the absolute God. They united with the side opposed to Him. (282-230, 1997.3.26)

What is the fruit of the tree of the



knowledge of good and evil? If love is misused, you inherit the eternal fruit of evil. If love is used properly, you inherit the eternal fruit of goodness. Is this fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil a literal fruit? That fruit refers to the sexual organs of man and woman. (226-110, 1992.2.2)

What was the Fall of Adam and Eve? They thought their sexual organs belonged to themselves. You came at this time to learn this. They made a mistake in connection with love. Why were Adam and Eve chased out? Would God chase them away because they ate a literal fruit? He isn't such an irresponsible God. He chased them out because they made a fundamental error and therefore they could not be acknowledged anywhere in the universe. (279-106, 1996.8.1)

Where are the fundamentals of the universe? The fundamentals of the unfallen universe are within the love relationship. We now know that this became the base of wickedness that destroyed heaven and earth. Thus, we can no longer lead haphazard lives. The mistake of one day overturned the history of eons, completely burying God, true parents, and the ideal world under it. That is how frightening the sexual organs are. Each time you urinate, you should be thinking about this: "Hey you scoundrel, even when you urinate, you'd better do it properly!" (281-120, 1997.1.2)

The original state of human beings, who were to have the loftiest value, was overturned through the Fall. Where is

the palace that can link together all such standards? It is the sexual organ. (240-315, 1992.12.13)

### 1.3. The devil Satan fell through fornication

What kind of a being is Satan actually? Particularly those who believe in Jesus must clearly reveal Satan's identity before God. What is Satan? He is an adulterer, an adulterer of love. That being, Satan, beat the father to death and violated the mother. You are the children born as a result. You are all offended, aren't you? If you cannot believe this to be true, challenge God in prayer, staking your life on whether my words are true or false. (38-175, 1971.1.3)

Who is Satan? He is the adulterer who violated Eve. Eve was meant to spiritually become the wife of God. She was to be Adam's wife, and at the same time, God's wife. Satan is the enemy of love. Thus, even though God has taught us to love our enemies, He has not asked us to love Satan, the adulterer. Satan cannot be forgiven. You can love those who belong to Satan, but cannot forgive Satan himself. As this is the Principle, you must understand it clearly. (148-294, 1986.10.25)

Since we are Christians and those who walk the path of truth and who have to resolve our ancestors' bitterness that resulted from their being accused by Satan, trampled upon and massacred as sacrificial offerings, we must clarify

the identity of Satan and understand the heart and viewpoint of God in the past, present, and future. When God is able to cry out, "Oh, my son, my daughter!" in tears of reunion, the world will be liberated. (8 -130, 1959.11.29)

The devil, Satan, is in the position of the chief culprit, who drove out the original owner, seized his wife and is leading even their children to their deaths. From this perspective, is there a way to forgive the devil, Satan, the enemy of God and humankind? Ultimately, the devil, Satan, became the adulterer in front of love and in front of God. Could God forgive him, therefore? If He forgave Satan, it would have led the whole world to destruction. Thus, can you all think that you will simply be able to become God's sons and daughters as you are? You must know that God and humanity must continue the historical path, being unable to avoid the way of suffering and pain until we reverse this situation. (53-338, 1972.3.6)

Where did your connection to love begin? Where was the starting point? It began with evil. The chief instigator of this evil was Satan the devil. What kind of involvement did this devil have? He was the adulterer of love. Human beings were born inheriting the flesh and blood of that adulterer. Then, is it the adulterer's love that you want to receive? Did you want to receive the love from a stained lineage through that of an adulterer? No. That is the issue. (35-90, 1970.10.4)

God exerted His utmost effort in cre-

ating the universe, dreaming of a great enterprise full of hope, but when His great endeavors and foundations of life and ideals were destroyed, heaven and earth became completely dark. It was here that the archangel Lucifer appeared as an enemy; should he be beaten to death or not? The son and daughter, who were the bone of bones and flesh of flesh that God loved most, were taken by Lucifer as his own. Should the head of such an enemy be cut off or not? It is God who was the first in history to take great pains over such problems. (27-60, 1969.11.23)

You must know that the villain who destroyed the qualification of the prince and princess that God had hoped for, ruined their family love, and destroyed their royal descendants and God's ideal family and heaven, was the devil, Satan. (302-220, 1999.6.14)

This villain is not only the enemy of God but also of humankind. It is the same as if the royal family, the prince and princess, were held captive in their own palace by the enemy commander, and lived as servants while producing the children of that servant world. Despite the fact that their descendants should have multiplied under the kingship of the prince and princess, fallen humanity is like a mob that multiplied under the devil's kingship. (302-220, 1999.6.14)

Those who investigate the contents of the Bible cannot deny the fact that the first ancestors entered into a parent-child relationship with the devil, Satan,

through illicit love. Human beings who should have been born within God's absolute love as His begotten sons and daughters, thereby inheriting His direct lineage and its value, inherited instead that of the devil, Satan, being born as his sons and daughters.

In Romans, Chapter 8, it is recorded, "And not only the creation, but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies." An adopted child has a different lineage. This is the human reality. (53-261, 1972.3.1)

In Romans 8, it is written, "And not only the creation, but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies," and "For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, 'Abba, Father.'" They could only become adopted children.

Today, Christians are adopted children. Adopted children have a different lineage. Jesus said in John 8:44, "You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do." Doesn't 'father' here indicate the lineage of humankind from its ancestor, the devil? Hence, in circumcision, the foreskin is cut. That is how it is. How can people claim that the fruit of good and evil is a literal fruit? (154-337, 1964.10.5)

Due to the Fall, human beings had no choice but to surrender to Satan, the

false father. They had exchanged their father. They abandoned God who was their true Father, and became one with the devil, Satan, the false father. In this way, the very first man and woman ended up becoming the son and daughter of Satan. (God's Will - 293)

Originally, what kind of being is Satan? The devil was a servant of God, yet this servant seized the daughter of his Master. This is the Fall. According to the biblical account of the Fall, Eve ate the fruit of good and evil, but that fruit is not literal. It refers to the villainous servant seizing his Master's daughter. God intended to fulfill His ideal by bearing and raising His son and daughter who would inherit His lineage in the future, but the archangel, who was created as a servant, seized God's daughter. That became the origin of the Fall. Heaven and earth became that way. You should be able to understand this kind of complex and involved content mostly if you listen to the Divine Principle. (85-308, 1976.3.4)

The Bible states that Adam and Eve fell by eating the fruit of good and evil, but why did they cover their sexual parts? If only the established churches had the idea to analyze the Bible a bit more intellectually, they would know the origin of the Fall right away. Why were they ashamed of their sexual organs? They could have covered their mouths or their hands. Having sexual parts is not something to be ashamed of, but through their use during the

Fall, they became the shameful palace that trampled on the love of Heaven. A fountain of true love should have sprung forth, but instead, a fountain of false love centered on the devil's love gushed out. Hence, among the foundations of love, this became the foundation of the worst form of love. (202-199, 1990.5.24)

When Adam was driven out, was it after having a son and a daughter or before? We could not witness this, but had there been children with Adam and Eve, would God have been able to chase them away? He would have had to shed many more tears. They would have clung to Him and cried, "Grandfather, why are You chasing us out?" If all four of them clung to His arms and legs and cried out, wouldn't He have had to push them off in order to drive them away? Perhaps rather than Adam and Eve who sinned, but their son and daughter who had not sinned would have penetrated God's heart. Knowing this, He chased them out before they could have a son and daughter.

After being driven out, they married and had children. Did God send them away, telling them, "Leave, get married and have sons and daughters," or did He chase them away without saying anything like that? Answer me. At any rate, didn't they bear children after being sent away? (218-230, 1991.8.19)

In the Last Days, the Fall must be reversed to dissolve the anguish of God, His providence, and humanity, all at the same time. This is how it will be, but

without knowing this, people are talking about eating the fruit of good and evil and so on... If you think my words are wrong, pray for forty days, putting your lives on the line. Then you should be able to know whether Rev. Moon of the Unification Church is lying or not. You were all not born from the original lineage. Hence, established religions have emphasized celibacy; if they had multiplied children of the fallen lineage, there would have been confusion. (156-228, 1966.5.25)

God hates immorality. Why? It is because human beings turned heaven and earth upside down through illicit love. We cannot do anything with this evil blood, which is why in asceticism, celibacy is emphasized. When a man enters into a trance of spiritual prayer, a woman will always appear to test him. Something like this will inevitably occur that blocks the way of asceticism. Why is that so? It is because history descended from illicit love. It is an amazing thing that the dogma of human beings falling through eating the fruit of good and evil has remained for two thousand years. (41-292, 1971.2.17)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen, they would have given birth to children who would have been the direct descendants of the eldest son of God. Adam would have been the eldest son, true father, and king. He would have been the king of the kingdom on earth and in spirit world. Furthermore, he would have been the true parent and true first son. That

is why the family of Adam would have been the royal household of the heavenly kingdom. Then, who would have been the grandfather of Adam's family? God would have been the grandfather. The mother and the father would have been Eve and Adam.

From the viewpoint of the positions represented, the grandfather and grandmother represent God, and the parents act on behalf of God. From the vertical point of view, God settles down in a family centering on the first, second and third generations. The first generation on the horizontal level is your grandfather, the second generation your father, and the third generation is yourself. Therefore, through your sons and daughters, the lineage of the royal family can be passed on and will continue forever. (218-255, 1991.8.19)

Do you know why God created Adam and Eve? Even He wanted to have the experience of loving children as a parent. Next, He wanted to experience conjugal love through Adam and Eve. He wanted to experience loving as a grandfather as well as loving His nation; He wished to possess all these loves. He bequeathed to humankind all the things He wanted to possess. You should know that it is your tribe, people and nation, this earth and the spirit world that has inherited this. (188-214, 1989.2.26)

Had they reached perfection without falling, Adam and Eve would have perfected themselves not only individually, but also universally, and a new fam-

ily centered on God's love would have begun. In this way, if the clan, tribe, people, nation, and world had been created from the family, the world would have become one great extended family attending God. The center of such a great family-like society would have been God and Adam. Furthermore, in that world, Adam's family life and life course centered on God would have remained as a historical tradition, together with his lifestyle, customs, practices, and life background. Those things could only become intertwined as traditions based on God's love.

God's love is the source of life and all ideals, so that even if one wanted to leave His bosom, one could not; and even if one did, one could not but return again. (91-240, 1977.2.23)

The Fall of Adam and Eve was not just something concerning themselves but was a fall from a position involving all of human history. In other words, the fact that Adam and Eve fell meant that they were not able to become good parents, but rather became evil parents. Through evil parents, evil children were born, and through them, evil tribes and nations and an evil world were formed; and within this global realm live the five billion members of the human race. Human history in this realm of the Fall is not a history of joy, but a history of sorrow; and humankind is not living in happiness, but in sorrow. (38-149, 1971.1.3)

Where can you pay money to hear these kinds of words? Even if you sold

your home, gave all your money and made ritual offerings for tens of thousands of years, no one would be able to teach you this. Only the founder of the Unification Church can do this. This is the secret of the universe. Even the Bible doesn't have this kind of explanation. The Bible tells us that Adam and Eve took and ate of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, and in so doing committed the Fall. How can you claim that this is a literal fruit? Can those without the ability of pre-schoolers insist that Rev. Moon, to whom doctoral degrees have been granted and who became the head of those so qualified, is a heretic? The Chinese characters meaning "heretic" (異端), do not mean that the ending is different, but simply that the ending cannot be seen. Are my words correct, or not? They are correct. (238-213, 1992.11.22)

In the secular world, criminals conduct themselves with dignity wherever they go as if they had not committed any crimes when no one knows of their crimes. However, if even an extremely young boy were to point out that he saw the crime being committed, the criminal would surrender right there. Thus, if you are to make the devil, Satan, surrender, what you should do is to expose his identity, reveal his crime, and launch a movement to drive him out from both heaven and earth. (53-194, 1972.2.21)

God is the Lord of the eternal universal laws, so we must drag Satan before God and accuse him of his

crimes. Watching Satan defend himself, we must prosecute him as a prosecutor would, and wring him tightly so that he cannot do anything. Then, the unfallen archangels, rather than the fallen archangels, must state, "That's right! Just as you said, that's right! That's right!" (65-201, 1972.11.19)

#### 1.4. Humankind inherited Satan's lineage through the Fall

The Fall changed Adam and Eve's lineage. Whose love changed it? They became the embodiments of Satan through his love as God's adulterous enemy. The living body of the man, and the living body of the woman entered the realm of Satan's love and united based on that; and the fruit of this was their children who thereby inherited Satan's love, life and lineage. (227-47, 1992.2.10)

Fallen people became false beings and so must be engrafted. Viewed linearly, your ancestors differ from the original. Because your father and mother are of a different lineage, you could only become adopted children; hence the logic that the Fall occurred through lineage. What is the Fall? It consisted of inheriting the wrong lineage. The explanation of the Fall being an act of wrongful love makes sense. Thus, it is unreasonable to deny what is being asserted in the Unification Church, that the first ancestors fell through love. Doesn't the Bible state that they fell by eating the fruit of good and evil? Do you know what that fruit is? Is it a fruit from a

tree that falls and rolls around when the wind blows? It is not. (157-158, 1969.4.2)

Satan entered Adam and Eve's hearts and became one with them, so that they inherited his lineage. Why can't God, who abounds in love, forgive Satan? God said He would forgive murderers and thieves, that He would forgive everything; He said if you believe in Jesus, you can receive forgiveness, but why can He not forgive Satan? That is because Satan besmirched the human lineage. What does that mean? From God's viewpoint, Satan is an adulterer, the adulterer of love. (156-226, 1966.5.25)

Adam and Eve married centered on Satan, so it is undeniable that they inherited his love, life, and lineage. Had they not fallen by eating the fruit of good and evil, they would have married centered on God. Just as the True Parents of the Unification Church blessed you, God would have called Adam and Eve after they had matured and blessed them centered on Himself. (228-254, 1992.7.5)

Why do we strike our own bodies? It is because human beings inherited Satan's blood, the blood of the enemy of God. God's enemy is the adulterer. The adulterer is the enemy of the love of God! People have inherited the blood of the adulterer. Eve, who should have inherited the right of kingship of the heavenly nation and become a queen, became the spouse of the devil, the partner of the servant. This was the secret of heaven and earth, exposed for the first time dur-

ing my lifetime. Thus, the satanic world must retreat. (172-277, 1988.1.24)

Why does God hate the devil? Christian logic dictates that one should love one's enemy, so why is God unable to love His enemy, Satan? If He were to love the enemy of love, heaven and earth would disappear. The heavenly laws of governance would disappear. The laws of existence would disappear. (191-43, 1989.6.24)

Satan destroyed God's ideal love and trampled on the ideal life and ideal lineage. Then, human beings bore children. God could not interfere with the sons and daughters who were the manifestations of Satan's love, life, and lineage. (197-286, 1990.1.20)

Why does Satan come without fail to those who, throughout our history, have walked the path of faith, strangling them, pressing them down, and sacrificing them? In God's eyes, Satan is the adulterer who stole and violated His family. Our original mother should have attended God, and built His kingdom of peace in heaven and on earth; yet we and our original father were driven out. Satan intervened and human beings came to be in this miserable state. It was no other sin than this that he committed. (156-226, 1966.5.25)

How did the devil bring about the Fall? Through the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil? Where did they cover themselves after eating the fruit? Did they cover up their mouths,



or their hands? Didn't they cover up the sexual parts of their bodies? This became the seed that sowed evil. They fell before they had fully matured, whilst they were still adolescents. Because the lineage of humankind in world history stemmed from this act, in the Last Days the phenomenon of such relationships will thrive. When the time comes that all across the world young people destroy the ethics of love, hidden in the shadows, just like Adam and Eve, and have no fear of heaven, that will be the time when the era of Satan's worldwide dominion will come to the earth. That is when we will be faced with the iron hammer of God. (200-227, 1990.2.25)

You must all understand clearly that humankind needs to change its lineage because of having inherited that of Satan's. (183-308, 1988.11.7)

Whereas Adam and Eve should have attained God-centered oneness, the Fall refers to attaining oneness with the archangel, who was God's servant. People, who should have inherited God's lineage, inherited instead the lineage of a servant. Hence, however much they call God, "Father," they cannot truly feel it because they have inherited fallen nature, which always thinks in terms of self-interest without regard for God or anything else. Thus, as everybody became conflicting beings and formed tribes and people, everything started to divide after a while. In this way, the realm of satanic culture was built. Dividing into two, dividing into three,

all things that divided came to belong to Satan's realm. (91-242, 1977.2.23)

Because of the complex entanglement of the human lineage, restoration has taken six thousand years; otherwise, almighty God would have restored everything in a day. As it has become like a chronic disease in the lineage, if it were to be pulled out all at once, everyone would die. That is why it has taken six thousand years. Did the first human ancestors fall through eating the literal fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? If that were so, how simple things would be. (155-295, 1965.11.1)

The question is: how did things such as the bases of sin, the Fall, evil and hell concretely come into being? We must think back to the time of Adam and Eve. If we explore the origin of why they fell, it was that they disbelieved God's words, "Do not eat the fruit of good and evil." The second reason is that they became self-centered. The third was that they wanted to love based upon self-interest first. These are the essential contents of the Fall, and we come to the conclusion that those who act likewise are on Satan's side. Fallen people are all those who have faithless and self-centered love. Ultimately, those who assert self-centered love are the people of the secular world. (79-198, 1975.7.27)

There can be no perfection in ignorance. Who did I say Satan was? He is the adulterer. I have made all this clear to you. Do you think you can go to the

Kingdom of Heaven if you ignore this? Do you think you can be saved if you ignore it? There is not even the slimmest chance. What a set of ignorant people! If you could be saved by just believing what you are told to believe, people like you and I would have been saved a long time ago. We would not have to suffer like this. (188-230, 1989.2.26)

It is amazing that the fact of the Fall having been a consequence of love was revealed in my time. This is something that is theoretically systematized through its historical background and content that cannot be denied. (128-88, 1989.2.26)

### 1.5. The meaning of the serpent's temptation

What is it that belongs to man and woman and is a poisonous snake, the trap of a poisonous snake? Isn't it said that a snake deceived Eve? What does it mean to say that a serpent tempted her? This is indeed referring to the sexual organ. Aren't there so many female organs out there that are more frightening than a poisonous snake? Likewise with the male organ; men use that serpent-like organ to tempt and seduce women. If you women mistakenly take it as bait, that's a big problem. A nation and even the world could go to ruin, and your way to heaven and eternal life would be blocked. (227-372, 1992.2.16)

All men and women alive on earth became Satan's live poisonous snakes.

The male sexual organ is a poisonous snake that spurts poison at the female. The day you lose your purity, your whole clan will be ruined. That is why the snake was used as a metaphor. Do you have a sexual organ or not? An angry poisonous snake is waiting with open mouth, but would you put your hands in there? Would you insert your love organ into it? (272-37, 1995.8.30)

If you misuse the right of lineage, it will cause a big problem. What does it mean to use the right of lineage? It means to make love. Thus, if men and women misuse this, it will be a problem. You must plant the seed in the right field. What do you all think the poisonous serpent in the Garden of Eden was? It was the male sexual organ. That's what it means. The female sexual organ is the serpent's mouth, a poisonous serpent with its mouth open. Once connected, everything is over and heaven destroyed altogether. The woman's organ, if misused, is the mouth of a serpent that is full of poison.

That is why women with skilled make-up are beautiful snakes. A snake watches quietly on the side, and when its prey approaches, it strikes suddenly. Women are extremely fearful beings. They have a serpent's mouth and bite. That is their sexual organ. Originally, the lineage was not such a bad poisonous one, and the sexual organ was not poisonous. Yet, if it is misused, the nation, the family, power and everything else are ruined. How terrible is this? It is the open mouth of a snake with poison. (228-31, 1992.3.1)

What is the sexual organ, what is the snake? In a man, it is the penis. What does it like most? The vagina. Isn't that so, isn't that right? That is why it is full of danger. God warned Adam and Eve because it's like lighting the fuse of gunpowder, pouring gasoline and it will explode any minute. The male sexual organ is like a serpent. You wives should go and peek quietly at your husbands'. It's easier to understand crude stories, so that is why I talk like this.

What was the serpent? It is the archangel's sexual organ. Doesn't that make it clearer? As the Last Days are here, I am teaching you all about these aspects this time. What is the woman's thing? It is the mouth that opens. When the man gets excited and both get excited, doesn't it open? Does it stay still? Doesn't taking a wife in marriage mean bringing the two together? If they are wrongfully brought together, a nation is ruined. For tens of thousands of years, the poison will not disappear. (304-270, 1999.11.9)

All men and women desire very wonderful partners. Everyone has different desires, but if you consider it from such a way of thinking, it is a poisonous snake. It is worse than AIDS. Once that connection is made, everything is ruined. If you misuse the sexual organ, everything will be completely destroyed. You will not prosper. It has become the worst place of all and the most fearful, more frightening than a tiger or lion. Those who misuse it even once are ruined and will fall into hell. (228-31, 1992.3.1)

The serpent is analogous to the male sexual organ. Doesn't the male organ look like a serpent's head? It goes around constantly seeking a hole. The female sexual organ is also similar to the cave of a poisonous snake with its mouth open. Once you bite it or are bitten, that poison will spread throughout the veins of your whole body, and you will die forever. Immorality is the way that individuals, families, tribes, and nations are ruined. This is because the snakes ate the fruit of good and evil. That's what it means. Men try to seduce women using that. (304-162, 1999.10.10)

No one knew that humankind would go to ruin like this. It is the most frightening thing. If we take a powder keg as an example, there is no container like this. Thus, if you were to go to the bathroom every three hours, in twenty-four hours you'd go eight times. Each time, you should say, "Hey, snake's head, come out!" If that is your true organ, it is a sacred organ. You men should worship it so that you will not be moved but rather overcome all the possible advances any beautiful woman might make in seeking to seduce you. It's not simply a matter of bowing to it. Worshipping is more than bowing with respect. It is more than obedience. I underwent such training. Whoever seeks to seduce me will do so in vain. Otherwise, it is difficult to become God's children. Thus, the words, "Before you hope to control the universe, you must control yourself" mean, in other words, to control your sexual organ. (304-270, 1999.11.9)

The male sexual organ is like the archangel before the Fall. The archangel deceived his victims with a forked tongue, then seduced, and cast them into hell. In the same way, he is behaving in such a way as to fall again, using something resembling the head of a snake. The snake bites. Adam and Eve were bitten by the snake. What else can “man eating woman” be referring to? It is a fearful organ. That is the archangel – the male sexual organ that is like a serpent’s head. (287-116, 1997.9.19)

Where did the Fall originate? The Fall began in the male and female organs. The organ itself is like the serpent’s teeth: once you are bitten, your family is ruined. However distinguished your household may be, it will be ruined in a flash if that organ is misused. Even a royal family will be totally ruined. Thus, AIDS has appeared like a judgment from this truth in the Last Days. (229-25, 1992.4.9)

## Section 2. The Results of the Fall

### 2.1. Fallen human beings and the state of the fallen world

#### 2.1.1. Youth problems and free sex

Just as Adam and Eve fell as teenagers in the shade of a tree, with the coming of the Last Days of Judgment which brings the fruits of world history, today’s youth all over the world have fallen into free sex. What is free sex? It is the trap of the devil’s Sodom and Gomorrah. It stimu-

lates young people’s sensuality, and then it is all finished. Everything falls over the cliff. What kind of disco dances do young people dance? The twist is like a snake’s dance. Doesn’t the snake twist its body? To twist means to turn part of your body. Just as the devil has sown, he will popularize this around the world to tempt humanity. (208-263, 1990.11.20)

As Adam and Eve fell through sexual misconduct, so will it be in the Last Days. The youth will all fall into promiscuity. Just as the ancestors sowed their seeds, at the time of harvest, the youth will cover the world in that way and bring it to ruin. That is today. This is undeniable. Where did free sex arise? Who promoted it? Adam and Eve did. Being the ones who fell, they are the ancestors of free sex. (257-60, 1994.3.13)

Didn’t Adam and Eve fall through free sex in Eden? Didn’t they have free sex? In the Last days too, it is free sex. If this is not redeemed, everything will have to be destroyed. My life’s work is to redeem this situation. I must bring it under control and build a bridge for you to cross from Satan’s realm over to God’s realm. If not, everyone will fall into hell. Men and women all fell in and died. That is why I must build this bridge to cross the great ocean to the peace of true love. No one but I can build this bridge. Once you have crossed over, there is no need for this bridge. Things like indemnity will not be necessary. We move into the era of absolute sex and absolute love. (281-293, 1997.3.9)

Disco dancing, liquor and smoking – you should have nothing to do with any of these things. You should have nothing to do with free sex. Homosexuals, lesbians and swinging singles are not needed. However strongly the wind blows, you should calmly maintain your position. However much the wind or typhoon blows, or the Earth moves, the direction that the Unification Church goes does not change, just as north, south, east and west do not change. Thus, once we unify the world, everything will be accomplished. (206-62, 1990.10.3)

Who is going to block this wave of free sex and sexual misconduct that pushes forth from all directions? Who is going to eliminate this wave of hedonism, the pursuit of sensual pleasures? Not satiated by drugs and illicit love, the last of the human race looks for recreational drugs – is that a problem of body or mind? (200-227, 1990.2.25)

What is ironic in America now is that even while free sex may be prevailing among the youth, they leave their own homes. This, in a way, is in heaven's favor. Leaving home, they are able to get away from their folks and country. American youth have no ties to the world, their country, family or parents. Based on free sex, they accept homosexuals and lesbians, and deny masculinity and femininity. If this continues, humanity will all disappear within a century. How unspeakably pained must God's heart be as He looks upon this

miserable state of humanity caught in the devil's spell! (208-265, 1990.11.20)

We must know that the hippie movement and the current problems of immorality and drugs are things that have all appeared as one aspect of the global communist strategy. Things such as free sex and the homosexual-lesbian movement are one form of behavior that destroys human rights and dignity. Viewed thus, the current destruction of the family, society and church has already reached its zenith, reaching a stage at which no individual, no theologian nor any state power can prevail against it. (128-33, 1983.6.1)

I know America well. Americans talk about sexual freedom, this and that, have one-night stands and then say good-bye. Everything is based on individualism and self-vindication, and they don't like it if the self is not at the center. Greetings are diplomatic; they may look you in the eye, but the mind may be elsewhere. Emotions and lifestyle are based on expediency. (127-328, 1983.5.22)

What kind of weapons did Satan use? He used an airborne weapon: that is smoking. Next, the liquid weapon is liquor; and then the solid weapon is drugs. Through these means, everything including your spirit is made to rot. He makes everything rot – your body and spirit, and everything from the nostrils to the lungs. So we do not drink liquor or smoke cigarettes. These are the weapons Satan uses to destroy human beings.

These three things, which are elements that prevent one's spirit from communicating with God, are the enemy's best weapons. What comes next? Free sex that destroys the order of love. All these things I must put in good order single-handedly. (126-70, 1983.4.10)

Free sex, homosexuality and lesbianism – these things should not exist. In the Last Days, things that did not obviously exist in history have come to appear in the world in broad daylight. Things that could not possibly exist in this universe have come to appear openly. The order of love is now completely destroyed. We must know that is why America has now become the bottom of hell. The order of love is totally destroyed, and through using drugs, the physiological order of man and woman is totally destroyed. What that means is that live young people will be ruined. Moral principles and order will be destroyed. (125-168, 1983.3.20)

I am seeking to single-handedly cure and restore this world, which talks about sexual liberation and free sex, and has become abominable today. I am licensed as the doctor who can do this. There is no one else who can cure this but me. It can be cured by teaching true love. There will come a time when people cannot help but believe in the Unification Church. I am notifying you that even if you are unable to believe, I have the responsibility to guide your sons and daughters to go such a way without fail, even if I have to drive them with a

whip. Do established churches have this kind of ability? Do they have an injection to cure this? (209-222, 1990.11.29)

Do not make love in a manner shameful to God, humankind, or this earth. Until now, those groups advocating free sex who call themselves hippies or yippies all have such past experiences and have done everything imaginable, but was that for the self? Is that what love is? We must know that this is what destroys humanity, disgraces God's name and spits the blood of love on planet Earth. That is the same as spreading the original blood of human beings on the earth. There they dance, do bad things and cause uproar. (93-29, 1977.5.8)

Since Satan knows that, in the Last Days, God will form His kingdom on earth, bring humankind to order, and cause them to enter His kingdom in heaven, the devil insists on behavior that is opposed to God. As a representative example, he completely crushed the one and only first love through free sex. First love was meant to be eternal, yet he turned it into a love between mutts and bitches. Heaven and earth became a world of such worthless love. This is the story of the human lifespan of seventy years.

Satan knows this, so he created a world of free sex in which men marry each other and women marry each other. They become messed up on drugs and only seek pleasure. Those who are intoxicated with physical satisfaction

will receive a summary judgment that leads directly to hell. Who is going to clear this up? It must be Rev. Moon – the True Parents must sort this out. (227-279, 1992.2.14)

All created beings are linked as pairs based on love. Were that love removed, they would be scattered like grains of sand. What kind of love do you desire? In the world of love, there is no concept of individualism, but that of pairs. In the insect world as well, there must be plus and minus, subject and object partners. This is the modality of existence of all created beings. (287-60, 1997.8.31)

### 2.1.2. Corruption of sexual morality

An example of the sort of things happening in America is that under the proposition of sexual liberation, high society people such as lawyers who attend a bar association meeting check into a hotel after the meeting and mutually swap wives. In just one week, they have slept with the wives of all their friends. (191-220, 1989.6.25)

Is it all right for women without husbands to put on makeup or not? Aren't prostitutes and street girls like that? Today unmarried young girls are walking around with rouge, but do you know how ugly the rouge looks? The original natural color of young people is beautiful. If you beheld it for a thousand years, you would still find it beautiful, not ugly. How beautiful that color is! You cannot produce color surpassing that. You can-

not create that color with rouge. (275-136, 1995.12.4)

If the family is ruined, this is fundamental ruin; everything is ruined. There are youth problems and breakdown in the family. There is not even one complete family. In the Last Days, women will have two men. From this arises the term sexual liberation. It is the responsibility of True Parents to repair all this, as if sewing together rags to make them better than a silk robe for God to wear. (304-166, 1999.10.10)

Chicago and Los Angeles are the same as New York. All of America's big cities are the same. Satan thinks that if he can totally ruin the family, which is central to Christianity, by corrupting sexual morals through sexual liberation, then the foundation that has been established globally until now will collapse. So he injects everyone with free sex, and in that way people all become little satans. (87-137, 1976.5.23)

Can the US government solve the problem of juvenile promiscuity in America today? That cannot be done through military power, economic power, science or technology. Are not all sorts of wicked things taking place these days in the name of sexual liberation? Is love like that? Love can lead to eternal life, yet it has turned out like this. So what hope is there here? It is hopeless even if you meet a man, if you see your son, or if you see your parents. Wherever you go, when you meet some-



one, it is hopeless. (183-337, 1988.11.9)

As the world became filled with turmoil and chaos, the disease of AIDS emerged. In the name of sexual liberation, confusion is spreading. True love cannot be found. The original human mind is seeking and pleading for it, but there is no way to find it. The further you go into the secular world, the more you will be hurt. The kind of love in a world that is based on outward appearance crushes everything. (210-280, 1990.12.25)

What started with Adam alone has now led to confusion among men today, as people speak of sexual liberation. Even incestuous relationships are occurring within the family. This is a miserable phenomenon not seen even in the animal world. Such breakdown and aberration of love within the family are unforgivable before God. This has become a world that He cannot bear to look at. (292-175, 1998.4.12)

When a couple attains complete oneness, heavenly fortune will protect them. Even if they wanted to fail, they could not. The fortunes of the family, society, nation, world, heaven and earth and God's love would form layers of protection for them. Yet if this oneness is about to be broken, would the world leave it alone? If that were the case, that seed would disappear. Would anyone be able to get a divorce? Divorce destroys that position protected by heavenly fortune. Would anyone be able to have an affair? I must single-handedly reorga-

nize this world that is arguing in favor of sexual liberation today. It must be cleanly reorganized. Until today, I have been doing this. American society is also saying, "There is no doctor other than Rev. Moon who can get a grip on this." There is no other such physician. (211-268, 1990.12.30)

We hear of murders of fathers, mothers and children. In extreme cases what do we hear? That a son is cohabiting with his mother. It is truly the end. Have you ever heard such things? There are many such cases, but they do not stir up rumors to this extent. Now, such a time has come. It is called sexual liberation. In the communist world, people are treated like animals, so this kind of thing would not even be considered a problem. These are called the Last Days. Do they differentiate between their cousin, uncle or mother? As for dogs, would a pup and its mother mate and have a litter again? When such a time comes to the human world, it is the end. (39-123, 1971.1.10)

Nowadays people emphasize the single life, and things like homosexuals and lesbians are an issue, but why do homos and whatnot become that way? What is in them that inevitably makes them that way? Incestuous relationships caused them to be that way. A grandfather willfully violates his granddaughter. A father violates his own daughter. The cause of these incestuous relationships is that ultimately people are contacting each other sexually as they please since the age of sexual liberation, the age of

free sex, arrived. They come into sexual contact not with some stranger from a distant town, but with someone from among their closest relatives. (261-44, 1994.5.22)

What is happening in New York now is that only the wealthiest people and those of the lowest level remain there. The people of the middle class who are the city's backbone all packed their bags and ran away; just last year, some six hundred thousand people departed. Among the lower classes there are prostitutes and rogues talking of sexual liberation, making the base for Satan. Those who think they cannot have their children educated in that chaos cannot help but leave. Up until now, there have been many hotels in town that are a market for prostitution. (87-135, 1976.5.23)

### 2.1.3. Homosexuality

We Unificationists intend to digest all the evil things of the world that Satan likes. We will digest the problem of the gay movement of homosexuals and so forth. We will digest free sex, the problem of immorality, all gangsters, terrorists and organized crime. We will take responsibility for the most difficult problems of the world. We will even digest the Communist Party. (109-34, 1980.10.26)

Isn't the gay movement widespread in the United States? Aren't there many homosexuals? It is because these people do not know the Principle of Creation. However, the members of the Unifica-

tion Church, who know the Principle of Creation, understood through education that they must absolutely get married. The gay movement has totally broken down here as a result. Your mothers and fathers may have gone out dancing, had free sex that shattered the family and everything. All of you understand about the Fall, however, so no matter how much you dance, can it lead to free sex? (118-109, 1982.5.9)

Are they saying that a law will be passed to legalize homosexuality? A law will be made? They should be ashamed to see the sun, the trees, the grass, or even a dog. Being that way, how can they dress, eat and live like other people? People who practice homosexuality will be the ones who oppose us and call us heretics. (118-295, 1982.6.20)

Then, what is America now? Be it homosexuals or lesbians, a cultural realm that denies the spouse is expanding in America. Is there a spouse for an angel? A long time ago, man followed Eve who betrayed God, but from now on, he must follow Eve who supports God. That is why I married many American men to Japanese women. Americans listen well to what women have to say; for them, women are queens. (119-246, 1982.9.13)

Is a woman who lives alone happy? If lesbians and homosexuals came here and listened to my words, would they think of continuing in their ways or will they think that they must remedy this? Would they be able to oppose Rev. Moon,

saying that he is wrong? The youth of the world did not know that such a teaching existed. If you seek to meet God, you must possess a love having the attributes of being eternal, unique, and unchanging. Otherwise, you will not be able to meet the Subject of true love or to participate in the way of true love. (124-86, 1983.1.30)

Homosexuals and lesbians: they will be saved through whose hands? Through the hands of Rev. Moon; my hands! Who can liberate these young people who are becoming living corpses, ailing from drugs and dying away? I will liberate them with my hands. Who will liberate those who promote free sex and gambling with love? Is there anyone in American Christianity who will do this? Who is there among the pastors of American churches? Next, who will block the Communist Party? Rev. Moon will block it. (124-329, 1983.3.1)

How about people like the homosexuals and lesbians of America? This is a presumptuous love. The longer they persist in it, the greater their ruin. It leads to ruin, the breakdown of individuals, families, children, nations, the world, and the universe. If they are destroyed, humanity will disappear automatically. When people become that way, humankind will perish. (125-68, 1983.3.6)

Today in America, lesbians, homosexuals and gays are becoming prevalent. This is sinful and there will be consequences. This malaise which afflicts

them is not found where heterosexual men and women live. Diseases not found in ordinary couples pervade them. Sexual diseases of the kind that arise from violating the principles of love are their punishment. Thus, central love is needed. You were born from central love. What is central love? It is parental love. This is eternally undeniable. It can never be denied. People might insist upon denying it, but it remains undeniable. (128-15, 1983.5.29)

These days, there's such uproar over homosexuals and lesbians. Those who do things like that will perish. They won't last even a century. They won't last for long at all. If they live like that, everything will be destroyed. What American culture is based on is that it is in the realm of the culture of satanic love, which is destructive and bound to collapse. As such, it must be tossed out. American culture is in the cultural realm of satanic love.

What is Unificationist culture? It is in the cultural realm of God's love. It is simple. It absolutely opposes free sex, homosexuality, and drugs. We oppose all of them. (134-14, 1985.1.1)

American women say they don't need aging parents. Who are the aging parents? Aren't they their parents and grandparents? Satan made it that way in the Last Days. Why? It's because Satan knows God's purpose. As God is trying to set up this formula, Satan tries to break its foundation. Who attacks? Satan does. Next, they say they don't

need spouses. Isn't this a truly strange system? Who made it that way? Satan did. This is Satan's goal. Homosexuals and lesbians are all the result of Satan. Next, they'll say they don't need babies. (135-115, 1985.10.4)

For those who have taken drugs and experienced being homosexuals or lesbians: how difficult is it to get out of it? It is human hell. We cannot lose the American youth who are caught in a net like that and end up becoming Satan's prey. Who besides Unificationists can save them? If we don't do this, there will be no America. (149-377, 1986.12.28)

Men and women are horizontal. They are level. The union of man and woman is to be engrafted, based on vertical, lifelong and eternal love. As men representing east and women representing west have lost the central line, they will seek to graft into this, so they must absolutely get married. Aren't there many in America who oppose marriage? There are many who, like homosexuals or lesbians, dislike having children. Those without children have lost out when they pass on to the spirit world. This is the formula of the universe. (163-88, 1987.4.19)

Wait and see: evil free sex will disappear one day. Homosexuals will also disappear one day. Lesbians: women marrying each other – how on earth can that be? Insects in the animal world don't even do that. Are such people human? Also, those wicked people who say there is no God must all disappear. The mate-

rialistic view of history will disappear. (188-157, 1989.2.19)

Men tire of women and women tire of men, so they go around daily, hungry for love and always lonely; they will all become homosexuals and lesbians and end up in the trash can. They smoke opium and all fall into the straits of self-destruction. Who will take responsibility for this? Will the State Department or the Pentagon be responsible? Will the nation's president take responsibility? All of us should take responsibility. (207-111, 1990.11.1)

As America has become the archangel nation in the Last Days, its women will not be qualified to be women. Hence, homosexuals and lesbians arise and say, "Let women marry each other. Let men marry each other!" The archangel does not acknowledge a complementary partnership. He does not recognize the right of ownership. He does not acknowledge heterosexuality. That is why everything has become like that. The reality of America today is that while opposing homosexuality on the one hand, it must present the way it should go honestly before God on the other. Issues like lesbianism, homosexuality, and family breakdown must be resolved completely. (240-155, 1992.12.11)

According to the US Statistics Bureau, the soaring divorce rate showed a threefold rise between 1970 and 1990, with the conclusion that one family out of six has a divorce, and the reality is

that nationwide, thirty percent of children are being raised by single parents. Furthermore, the strange, decadent phenomenon of gay married couples is spreading. (288-197, 1997.11.28)

Immorality, sexual misconduct and decadent trends, along with hedonism, are systematically ruining families. It has come to the point where some people of today think that gay people can also build a different type of family alongside the traditional family, and that they can have children through adoption or artificial insemination. (288-171, 1997.11.27)

The problems of the world today are serious. If you go to a place like America, you will see many gays among whom men are marrying each other and women are doing the same. Really, where can we find such laws? Physiologically, they are not made to be that way. After one generation their lineage will die out. Everything will be gone. Heavenly fortune will drive them out, and it is not as if their hearts will be happy. They will accept suffering as such, and more complicated problems will arise. Thus, subject and object partners will always coexist in a living environment. You must know this as you lead your life in society. (243-74, 1993.1.3)

Free sex is indeed the wicked trend that we must completely eradicate from this planet. The elements that are related to free sex such as drugs, violence, homosexuality, and AIDS are driving humanity toward destruction. (288-283, 1997.11.30)

Today, those that are gay appear and deny their parents; husbands do everything imaginable and wives likewise; but as these contravene the heavenly laws of the universe, they will be judged by universal criminal law in the other world. (106 -112, 1979.12.16)

## 2.2. Reining in the errant culture of free sex

### 2.2.1. In the Last Days the order of love is corrupted

As true love is most precious, violating it is a universal crime. Immorality, juvenile promiscuity, family breakdown, incest, homosexuality, indescribable sex crimes, and so on are the reality of today. These cause God grief. The ideal of creation lies in the fulfillment of the family ideal which is based on sublime and eternal love, but why did it result in today's miserable way? We can say that in the Last Days the result of the Fall of the first ancestors is bearing fruit in displays of decadence, just like the seeds that were sown. (135-12, 1985.8.20)

Americans do not understand that there is no foundation of true love in their nation. Ultimately, things will go to ruin because of false love. Couples, siblings and parent-child relations break up. Incest spreads and sweeps people into hell, destroying everything. Having come completely to the zero point, American society must be built anew. It is one world under God! All color barriers, obstacles, customs, and conventions

must be abolished. Only the parental heart and love of the family will remain: that is, to invest and forget as parents truly love their children. This is the concept of heaven. (293-152, 1998.5.26)

As unity is the origin, Satan destroyed it completely. He destroyed everything through free sex, homosexuality, and incest. We must totally overcome this. As it has become hell on earth, we must go 180 degrees in the opposite direction. As we have such an ideal, we will be able to fulfill an ideal world without problems, building an ideal nation and world on the foundation of an ideal family by going in that diametrically opposite direction. (261-284, 1996.6.20)

Free sex is the devil's destructive strategy to erase God's ideal from this earth without a trace, so that He is unable to step into this world. Next, Satan made people mentally ill through drugs. In a place like this, we cannot find the way of heavenly principles in a normal situation and all the ideals of love blossoming in a loving couple. Could the restoration of God's ideal be fulfilled in such a state? How did America become like this in forty years? (253-303, 1994.1.30)

It has become a world pervaded by free sex and incest. How did this happen? At the time of Jesus, these things were to have been resolved. The returning Lord must come again to definitely resolve incestuous relations. However, because he was driven out, the free world is unknowingly falling into hell,

with people all lining up to fall off the cliffs. People do not know how to turn around at this point. If I had been here at that time, it would not have become like that. The free world chased me out and created a mess in the space of forty years. (252-139, 1993.11.14)

Can a woman perfect herself alone? She cannot. Don't American women say they don't want to get married, but they do want children? How did this happen? They say they don't need their grandparents, parents, spouses, siblings or anything. As they cannot live alone, men stick together, women stick together and then do they comfort each other? Is that the way to offer consolation? Where did incest begin? Behind it is free sex. (248-111, 1993.8.1)

Men or women on earth end up becoming like animals. In other words, with regard to sexual relations they are the same as animals. What is happening is that grandfathers cohabit with their granddaughters, and uncles with their nieces. In this way, based on destructive environments that cannot even be imagined in the realm of ideal love, the world will collapse. Living in the same house with her mother, a daughter makes love with her father. Living like this, they even appear and are interviewed on television. In America, it is said that such incestuous relationships comprise more than twenty percent. (208-304, 1990.11.21)

God cannot intervene in the affairs of fallen humanity. His beloved was

snatched away and bore children. Could He visit such a place and love them next to that devil? These are not empty words. Thus, Rome was destroyed through immorality, and America will now also perish through immorality. If you go to Pompeii, there are still traces of such immorality, traces of incestuous relationships over three generations. In America, twenty percent are that way. This is meant to be destroyed. (197-265, 1990.1.19)

Do you know why America is now going to perish? I warned them before. Do you know how numerous the cases of incest are? Twenty percent in this nation of scoundrels! Grandfathers cohabit with their granddaughters and fathers sleep with their daughters even though they are married. All the symptoms of apocalyptic destruction are here. An atomic bomb has been dropped from heaven and we are in an age where we might be directly bombed. Yet the developed nations do not know how fearful this is. This is where they need me and the Unification Church. Without the Unification Church, they will never be able to bring this under control. (201-165, 1990.3.30)

Men are in the archangel position. Thus in America, cases of men violating their own daughters or even mothers are taking place. The incidence of incest has exceeded twenty percent. Satan is throwing grandmothers, mothers, younger sisters and even daughters into confusion. Therefore I am devis-

ing a strategy to surround all of hell in order to destroy the satanic realm. (227-71, 1992.2.10)

With Jesus' death on the cross, the satanic world on the left side triumphed. Due to the fact that the Vatican could not fulfill its responsibility, people fell into atheistic materialism, going through the stages of the French Revolution and humanism. Driving out God, His people, and even His belongings, humanity has become miserable. They are also suffering without having food to eat. Who made them like that? God made them like that. In this democratic world, people boast of material worth, but they do not know about the grace of the Christian cultural sphere and how to return this to God. They cannot fulfill their human portion of responsibility and end up becoming animalistic people. How can incest occur in a family with a Christian cultural background? Such people have become rotten in heart and spirit, and offerings to the devil.

(214-243, 1991.2.2)

Adam fell while in his teens without his Parent's permission in the shade of a tree. That is how he sowed his seeds, so that is how they are reaped. Why have teenagers become a worldwide problem in this age, and why has the age come in which they exercise full power that no one can control? This is something inevitable. The only way this can be managed is to learn the way of the coming True Parents. This must be done. (262-212, 1994.7.23)



In the history of Korea, what we can take pride in globally is the realm of the tribe. It is a race that God has preserved within the providence in order to revere the ancestors and maintain one tradition and a pure lineage. Thus, we must reorganize ourselves quickly so that no adulterous thugs will appear. Today, in places like America, incest is a problem. Grandfathers cohabit with their granddaughters, fathers with their daughters, brothers with their sisters, and every imaginable behavior is taking place. Such a trend has emerged now with relatives of the eighth degree of closeness intermarrying. This has to be judged and eliminated. Our mission in resolving this is great. We have the responsibility to keep the tradition of a tribe of pure lineage, and to inherit and foster the ethical concepts of a people. (213-154, 1991.1.16)

### 2.2.2. Absolute purity: do not defile the lineage

God pursues a lineage that preserves purity eternally. We must know the fact that our desire as human beings and that of our first ancestors, Adam and Eve, was how to preserve the direct lineage eternally. This traditional thought has still not disappeared. Why? Because what God has planned is absolute. His will must be fulfilled absolutely at some point. If it could not be fulfilled, He would not be God. This is immutable. The numerous conflicts among religious denominations, religions and nations are not God's will. They are not in accor-

dance with it and will all break down. (249-188, 1993.10.10)

The True Parents must bear the responsibility over all things that Adam and Eve failed in and resolve them in their stead. Otherwise, there is no path to restore the true parental position. The parents sowed them, so those who are to be parents must harvest them, burn the bad things, store away the good things, and distribute the seeds that all people seek after. These are the words of the Divine Principle: true love, a pure lineage, and ideal conjugal love. There is no other way to go as human beings. All other things will disappear, but this will accompany human life, eternal life. That is how precious the Divine Principle is. (256-28, 1994.3.12)

Where the original lineage was lost, no culture of heart will emerge. Culture is connected to the unfolding of history. Based on the family, society, nation, and world, this must be propagated. "We pledge to perfect the world of the culture of heart, connected to the original lineage." The point is to bequeath a pure lineage. Otherwise, we would be cut off from the world of the culture of heart. That vast Kingdom of Heaven is the foundation of the heart that we can live in, but if the world of the culture of heart cannot be built, that world will be cut off. Hence, we must live a life centered on the realm of the culture of heart . (260-305, 1994.5.19)

Through what did the Fall occur? We

can conclude that it occurred through fornication. In connection with the exposition on the Fall, we must talk about all of these things. Satan was a god of fornication. God is a god of purity. What does this refer to? The lineage; I am speaking of the bloodline. The satanic world is totally a world of fornication, the world of the devil. (266-22, 1994.12.4)

A clean lineage, a pure lineage must be maintained. Just as God drove out fallen Adam and Eve, if your lineage is stained, you must remove yourself completely and return to the back of the line of humanity to come in as fallen people. In the future, leaders will be only those who preserved their purity. These people will inherit and also bequeath the mainstream traditional thought. It is unforgivable for Blessed Couples to fall again. Western society is in terrible confusion. (268-110, 1995.3.31)

Do you know what will happen if you become a drug addict? Don't you know that love addiction is much stronger than drug addiction? People became addicted to false love, causing them to perish. Women too are like that; they have two minds. When you women make love with your husbands, you should think, "God is visiting us. He has descended into my husband. I will clean and prepare our bed well for tonight" and focus all possible devotion from the time of your baby's conception. Focus your devotion when you are children, then siblings, then spouses, and finally parents; focus where such pure couples, mobilizing the

four great realms of heart, will love each other. Have you ever thought about it like that? (273-21, 1995.10.21)

What fearful beings women are. If one woman is mistreated, a nation will perish and a clan will be destroyed. The same holds true for men also. If a woman mistreats her husband, the nation will perish, her tribe will be ruined, and the generations of purity maintained through her ancestors will all be hurt. It is serious. Thus, the true form of the highest truth before a woman is her husband. She has given her first love to her husband. That first love cannot be traded. Even if she offered everything to God she could not exchange this, and even if Adam was offered, she could not exchange this. Only after offering the perfected God and Adam, the two of them, can she trade them for the first time. That is how tremendous first love is. (275-83, 1995.11.3)

God cannot interfere with the results of the Fall, and Satan, after making things this way, says, "Hey, I was wrong, but I can't even keep up with this!" Thus, there is no one who likes this. There are more and more people committing suicide. Purity, the most precious thing that has to be protected, which women maintained as the base of this valuable love, has been trampled on from all sides. Women's parents should have provided an environment to protect them, but their grandfathers, fathers, and brothers violated them. Hence, even in a dream, they don't want to see any men. Even if

they have to die, they hate men. (283-32, 1997.4.8)

You must conquer the body and its five senses! Will you follow physical or spiritual love? Even if you had to die ten million times, you must preserve your chastity. Women who are about to be married and all children must preserve their purity. Before marriage, you preserve purity and after marrying a true man, you must maintain chastity. Did you women understand? (286-161, 1997.8.9)

As the seeds of youth problems were sown, and since the wrong alliance took place in the Garden of Eden, this therefore must be turned around for humankind to marry on heaven's side again, and the lineage must be changed; this logic should be affirmed theoretically. Thus, we assert the absoluteness and purity of youth. Absoluteness is absolute. For what? For the purpose of absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal love. Due to false love, things turned out this way, so it must be turned around into true love. (288-48, 1997.10.31)

You must guard your sexual organs. We must launch a movement to guard the original organs. God created organs of pure love. You all must protect them. They are absolute organs. They are absolutely unidirectional. You must eternally follow the way of love connected to that absolute one direction. They are the organs God originally desired. People must know that they are the palaces of love, life, lineage, and conscience, where

four palaces have gathered in one place. They are the most holy place. You must preserve their purity eternally. (288-67, 1997.10.31)

The question is: how do we bequeath a tradition of absolute purity? The people of Israel used to stone the offenders to death if this was defiled, but not today. It is more frightening than that. We cannot think even in our dreams of falling again before the heart of God who had to expel His only son and only daughter, Adam and Eve. Thus, the boundary must be declared. Those who are left behind on the day when that is declared are all the evil firstborn among all the firstborn left behind on Satan's side. (288-111, 1997.11.25)

Just as the Israelites had to follow Moses in the course to restore Canaan, now is the time for us to enter it and restore God's kingship. We must endure suffering greater than even that of the 430-year course in Egypt and the miserable 4,000-year history of God from Adam to Jesus, overcome everything and comfort Him. You do not go to heaven by apologizing or just because you've repented. The right of inheritance arises on the foundation of comforting God and the True Parents after surmounting that peak, repenting and pledging to bequeath an eternally pure lineage as the new lineage of their child. (288-114, 1997.11.25)

You must pledge true purity and chastity anew before God, looking back

and denying your past based on the fact that you were unable to lead a life of purity until now. You Unificationist women must maintain your purity before and chastity after marriage. For whose sake is that? It is not only for your own sakes. It is for your husbands and families, your nation and the world. If not, when you enter heaven, the eternal world, you will not be in the position to settle into heaven and God's love as an individual, family, people, nation or cosmos. You won't be able to do anything. (288-146, 1997.11.27)

The future world will be placed at the crossroads between heaven and hell, depending on whether the moral code of preserving the purity and protecting the value of the family will be established. Will the problems plaguing all of the nations of the world such as the degeneration of youth and constant crimes related to drugs, increasing family breakdown and divorce, the spread of AIDS and sex crimes, be solved by political power? Current academic education and religious teachings are unable to solve these problems. (288-139, 1997.11.26)

From now on when I conduct the Blessing, I will not bless those who flirted and violated chastity. Unless you are chaste men and women, I will not marry you. When the restored Adam and Eve settle in the Garden of Eden and stand in a public position in the world, will they gather together fallen sons and daughters and bless them? Such a thing is impossible. Thus, those who have flirted and had

relations must know that whatever kind of man or woman they are, they will not be able to receive the Unification Church Blessing in the future. If that is the case, my intent is that there will only be the sons and daughters born from blessed marriages. Thus, I will marry only the children of Blessed Families. (233-351, 1992.8.2)

From here on, all women will maintain their chastity. A pure religion has to be one that absolutely rejects sexual deviation. Thus, it is said in Christianity, "All sins are sins outside the bones, but fornication is a sin inside the bones." Love in the satanic realm is sexually deviant. Maintaining chastity blocks all fornication. Numerous people opposed the love of the satanic world. To prevent everything from becoming part of that world, God established the way of bridal chastity by reforming the world through Judaism and Christianity. From here, if bride and the groom attain oneness, a way would open up for these two worlds. Thus, if a pure bride and a pure groom of the world of historical tradition come together, love each other and encircle the world, the entire satanic world will collapse. Hence, since the beginning of history, countless women have been sacrificed in order to open the gates to the realm of Christian culture. They have been caught and violated. They have undergone every possible humiliation at the hands of the powers that be. (238-276, 1992.11.22)

If Jesus had married and shared

his love with a woman who loved him more than he could ever love, would the devil be able to pull away the children they bore? God would protect them. Christians will say all kinds of things and raise a big fuss. What do you think would have happened if a pure Jesus, as a good man, welcomed a good woman and had a family that God could protect? If children of goodness had been born then, the world would already be unified within two millennia; it would have become one tribe. That wouldn't even have taken seven centuries. (245-45, 1993.2.28)

The more people pursue a pure sublime conscience and the sphere of activity for a lofty, vast and profound world of conscience, and desire such a foundation of love, the larger, higher and broader their sphere of activity in the spirit world will become. If you think only of yourself, your sphere of activity becomes more and more narrow. (275-70, 1995.11.3)

Before God, Blessed Couples should pledge the unity of their family and couple and eternal conjugal trust and purity, and promise that they will raise and nurture their children, teaching them a high level of morality and purity. These couples come from diverse linguistic, racial, national and religious backgrounds, yet they took part in this Blessing because of the faith that God's love and the start of world peace comes from perfectly God-centered families. I invite you all to be not just spectators in this historic cer-

emony, but that you come forward with the people around you who are related to you, and renew your marriage vows before God. (288-165, 1997.11.27)

### 2.3. True Parents and fundamental restoration

#### 2.3.1. To solve the fundamental problem, the origin of the Fall must be understood

In order for us to solve and rectify the global and moral problems of humankind, there must be a principled view of the Fall. This is the final desperate phenomenon of the Last Days due to Satan betraying God and dictating the course of history. It is the strategy of Satan to ruin and destroy humankind. If all this is not resolved, the problems of history cannot be solved, and there would be no way to liquidate the debts of history. Therefore, we are advocating returning to Godism, the true love ideology, and God's Creation and ideal as an alternative proposal. This is not egocentric but altruistic. We must create the object partners of our love. Without such content, there is no way the problems of this world can be solved. (219-266, 1991.10.11)

The historical Fall originated from a wrongful marriage centered on a false parent. As Adam and Eve fell during their youth, the corruption of youth began in the Garden of Eden. They sowed the seeds of corruption of the youth. Owing to that, the whole ideal of God centering on Adam's family was

completely shattered. Seeds planted just like that will grow, and in the Last Days there comes a time in which their fruits will be borne. There is no one in the world capable of preventing the corruption of the youth. America itself cannot stop it, but instead has become the field of free sex, homosexuality, and lesbianism. It is a complete mess. Can all these things be stopped by American education and religion? Such things cannot be blocked by America's political and economic power, or by military power. They can only throw their hands in the air.

Then who is capable of solving these problems? Only God is. Since they were planted by false parents, the motive for committing sin was humanistic. Since the false parent, Adam, erred and messed everything up, and as he fell in ignorance, the restored Adam must understand the truth completely on earth. He can make Satan surrender by understanding the details of God's secrets, what the goal of His standard of perfection is, and what manner of wrongdoings the devil perpetrated. (302-222, 1999.6.14)

The cause of all difficult global problems lies with two people: man and woman. Their entanglement led to national, global, and cosmic problems. What was their problem? Love. They erred in the matter of love. Hence, the True Parents must come and undo the corruption of the youth and the failure of Adam's family which was smashed to smithereens in Eden due to the false parents.

The True Parents will bequeath the lineage of God's love, and all must

become living beings centered on love, true olive trees and not wild ones. Those who become true olive trees will change their lineage. I am someone who has all the theoretical systems that can connect people to God's lineage. It is so if you go that path. That is a proven fact. (302-226, 1999.6.14)

So what is Rev. Moon doing at this time? He has been solving all the problems centering on the issue of youth, which all representative nations – the so-called developed nations, namely of course the United States, Russia and China – and even religions have given up on. The very person who has been conferred the privilege to do that is Rev. Moon. There is no such person other than him. (302-228, 1999.6.14)

It is said you will reap what you sow. Since Adam and Eve fell while they were in their youth in the Garden of Eden, families have been completely destroyed until there is not a single family in the world that God could claim as His own. These are the Last Days. That is indeed the reality today.

Do the American people have a view of the world? They have no worldview. Do they have a view of the nation? No. Not to mention a view of society, they do not have a view of the tribe, people or family. They deny their mothers and fathers. That is individualism – returning to the position of the archangel, the devil. Man denies woman and woman denies man. Since the Last Days have come, Satan must expose himself in the end.

Thus, Satan destroyed the family completely. There is no way for Satan or God to solve the problems of juvenile delinquency and family breakdown. If God could, He would have done so at the time of Adam's family in the Garden of Eden.

Can God, who was not able to interfere in the Garden of Eden, do anything about this perishing world? Who must bear the responsibility for this? As the false parents, who were made to fall in ignorance ruined things in this way, the True Parents must completely understand everything, God's secrets and Satan's secrets, and expose Satan's secrets before God, saying, "You thug, you turned out to be a murderer!" Wouldn't even a murderer in hiding slip away from the human world forever, when the proof of his crime is revealed, his crimes declared for what they are, and he is pronounced guilty? It is the same; the reality today is exactly the same as this situation. (302-224, 1999.6.14)

God who is full of anguish due to the Fall of our first ancestors must be consoled. We must start from the position where we can console God, who has a large nail of sorrow stuck in His heart due to the Fall of Adam and Eve. In order to do so, we must become filial children who can comfort the God of grief.

By fulfilling the ways of filial children representing their families, loyal citizens representing their nations, saints representing the world, and divine sons and daughters representing heaven and earth, we must console God. That is not

all; we must, without a doubt, mobilize new youth, bless them anew and eliminate all elements which Adam defiled. (302-224, 1999.6.14)

The hope of humankind is to remove the mask of the Fall, which refers to the lineage that was changed. What is the fall of the lineage? That refers to man and woman engaging in an illicit sexual relationship. Centering on whom? Satan.

If we ask whether Adam and Eve gave birth to sons and daughters before or after the Fall, nobody would say they gave birth before the Fall. Who took responsibility for their marriage for the sake of those sons and daughters? God cannot take responsibility for people whom He drove out. There is no doubt the marriage was conducted by Satan the devil.

Thus, Satan occupied the place, where God would have entered Adam's mind and where Adam and Eve would have fulfilled their conjugality, and planted his lineage there. Didn't they conceal their sexual parts after the Fall? If they had eaten with their mouths, they would have concealed their mouths and hands, but they did not do so. Those sexual parts became the basis of lineal resentment. (302-220, 1999.6.14)

The two tablets inside the Ark of the Covenant refer to Adam and Eve – they symbolize them. The most holy place refers to the sexual parts, which are inviolable. Didn't those who tried to touch it perish? The most holy place is



that very place. Next came Aaron's staff with sprouts! What is the staff? It refers to eternal life. As new buds sprout from a dead staff, it means one will never die. Centering on what? Original love. You would die without love. Thus, new buds sprouted forth from Aaron's staff. Since there was such significance, it was laid and attended to in the sanctuary. The tabernacle symbolized God's body. The body is the sanctuary and the most holy place refers to the sexual organs. (325-62, 2000.6.29)

### 2.3.2. Why True Parents are needed

The people we need are the True Parents. What started from the false parents must be restarted by the True Parents. The false parents are the ones who inherited false love and false lineage starting from false love. This must be reversed. Then, how can we inherit true life and true lineage centered on the love of the True Parents? In other words, the issue is how to inherit the original seed again since we inherited the wrong seed of life.

With regard to this issue, it cannot be inherited without the True Parents. Therefore, the Messiah must come upon the earth, and his seed, the seed of new life of the True Parents, must be injected and grafted. Through this, you can return to the original position of the true olive tree. It is simple. Therefore, God is our True Parent. So, think how close He is. The vertical Parent is God, and the True Parents fulfill ideal love as horizontal parents. (218-223, 1991.7.29)

Why are the True Parents needed? They are needed to liquidate the base of Satan's love, life, and lineage. How did man and woman fall into such a position? They fell through the sexual organ. Originally the sexual organ was the palace of love. Now what has happened to that palace of love? The human sexual organ is such a precious thing, being the palace of love, life, and lineage. Would this be filthy? It is sacred. It became filthy because of the Fall. From God's original viewpoint, it is not something filthy but sacred. It is most precious. Life, love, and lineage are connected here. Satan defiled something so sacred. (218-176, 1991.7.28)

Adam was originally a parent who could have become your ancestor, but failed to connect to God's love. As he could not connect to it, your parents cannot connect you to God's love. The True Parents are different in that they have brought the special right to connect you to God's love. Since you did not listen to your parents but listened to Rev. Moon of the Unification Church, is this social justice or evil? It is justice. The fundamental principles of the cosmos work that way. (118-147, 1982.5.23)

How did I become the True Parent? I became the True Parent by my being able to offer the requisite devotions that can bring down the walls created by the Fall of our first ancestors. Our Unificationist community includes everyone from Protestants to Catholics, Buddhists, Confucians and Muslims. Buddhism is also included here – do you know that or

not? You should be embarrassed if you didn't. If they enter here, the religions can unite. Regarding the issue of race, people of the five different skin colors can become one. (118-270, 1982.6.13)

The Messiah comes as a man who has perfected the original true parental love and is the embodiment of the original ideal. Whenever you say "I" you must think about this. Then are you not liberated? It is like that. If you are liberated from Satan, his realm of life and realm of lineage, then everything is done.

If so, what would you do after being liberated? We must attend God, instead of the devil, and form His cultural realm and the True Parents' realm of life. As we stand in the position of the perfected Adam, we must fulfill the purpose of his birth. Therefore, the True Parents' love dwells within us, and God's love dwells in us. That love is the root of the harmony which can perfect us. In other words, we have His love, life and lineage; they are the union of three. (202-283, 1990.5.25)

The ideal history and new culture, love, life, family, nation, world and cosmos, together with God's love, will begin based on the True Parents. You must understand that the term "True Parents" is nothing like what you have known until now. In order to establish a relationship with the ages to come, nations, individuals, and families perished. Therefore this position is a place where the blood of innumerable billions of sacrificed offerings is crying out to God.

The Bible states that the blood of Abel shed by Cain cried out from the ground to God. There is no other position that can resolve all history; this is the only one. The throng that has gathered to inherit such a mission and to straighten this amazing way of indemnity is none other than all of you. If you come to understand this truly, you would not be able to complain about your life or your situation in your dreams, even if you were to die a thousand times. (67-226, 1973.6.27)

The original ideal of God's creation was to establish His kingdom in heaven and on earth through the name of the True Parents. Without that name, God's Kingdom will not appear. If you were to ask today's Christians, "Why wasn't Jesus able to enter heaven instead of staying in paradise, despite his being God's beloved begotten son?" they would not be able to give you an answer.

God's Kingdom in heaven and on earth can only be established through the foundation of the perfection of the True Parents and of love. The mission to unify the kingdom after going to the spirit world belongs to the True Parents, and this is no one else's mission. Jesus could not become a true parent, which is why he is in paradise. (131-182, 1984.5.1)

Hitherto in the fallen world, there has been no trace of anything or anyone having received love from the True Parents. Thus, even if such a foundation appeared in the spirit world, it would not be needed. There is a precise vertical and

horizontal principled standard and formula. You must understand that there is such a formula. You cannot do as you please. (131-183, 1984.5.1)

Everything begins from the True Parents. The beginning of everything is not you, but them. It is the same with our lives, actions and connecting together as a family of love. The True Parents are the beginning. These are not my words but these are God's principle and idea of our first ancestors. How can you make your families like that of the True Parents? This is what you must think about. (277-250, 1996.4.18)

How much did I invest for the sake of the world? How many tears and how much sweat and blood did I shed, and how many sighs did I heave? I did not do that for the sake of feeding myself or making myself successful. It was in order to liberate this earthly world, the spirit world, and God. There is no such person in history other than Rev. Moon. There is none other than the True Parents. It has such a historical background. It is not just a concept. In forming a substantial realm in this world as I built the foundation of this ideal, I have reached a level where all nations of the world can solemnly bow their heads before me. (210-363, 1990.12.27)

### 2.3.3. Lineage is restored through the Blessing

All fundamental issues cannot be resolved other than by the contents of

the secrets of heaven that Rev. Moon has revealed. I was introduced as the True Parent, but what on earth are true parents? Where are the True Parents? They are in heaven. God is the True Parent. Today, humankind, and all the religions of the fallen world call God, "Father". The Lord who created heaven and earth is indeed the Father. Whose father? He is our Father, but through what paternal content did we develop a parent-child relationship? It is God's love. Then, centered on God, the lives of Adam and Eve untouched by the Fall will be connected in love.

Centered on God's original love that has nothing to do with the Fall, the unfallen ancestors, Adam and Eve, who are our original ancestors, should have attained oneness, burning with God's love. What unites man and woman is neither the man on his own nor the woman on her own; love is absolutely necessary for unity. If man and woman unite, everything is harmonized.

God is absolute, unique, eternal, and unchanging. The love of the absolute God is not divided in two. The love that man possesses and the love that woman possesses are not two but one. You should know that; yet you have lived to this day in ignorance of it. (2000.3.3)

What is the Fall? God desired through the ideal of creation to bequeath His direct lineage, starting from a family to form a tribe, people and a nation, to create a world of peace, namely God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. What is God's Kingdom on earth and in heav-

en? There must be a house of love where God can dwell: within my body, in the family, nation, world, and in the infinite spirit world where nothing is impossible. The individual is a house which God can enter and inhabit, centered on true love. The family is formed by a couple in which man and woman are different and opposite poles. In the Garden of Eden, the family united by love was the place for God to come to dwell in. The mother and father were prepared to bear fruit – God’s grandchildren – as the seed connected to His lineage for all generations.

What is the Fall? If God is the first generation, Adam is the second. The Fall refers to being unable to have a grandchild of the lineage in the third generation. Not being able to have grandchildren is the Fall. Did Adam and Eve give birth to sons and daughters after or before the Fall? They had sons and daughters after the Fall. So who married them? Adam and Eve had nothing to do with God and were driven away. They then married and gave birth to children as Satan’s offspring. Today, the six billion people on earth are the sons and daughters who have inherited the lineage of the fallen Adam and Eve – who were expelled, hid themselves and married wrongfully – and are thus headed for hell. They have nothing to do with God. (2000.3.3)

You must understand the roots. Then which way does not lead to ruin? The lineage of true love must be connected to today’s six billion people and to the

world of the future, transcending all generations. It must become an unchanging lineage and a connected body of kinship in which all branches of a large tree stretching in every direction form the central root to the trunk and buds, and feel like one body. If what is thus connected is a nation, it becomes a national heaven; if it is the world, it becomes a global heaven and if it is heaven and earth, it will be the cosmic heaven.

All these were lost because Adam and Eve were not able to become true parents. Thus, the fallen parents who were unable to become true parents are false parents based upon false love, creating false families, false tribes, false nations, and a false world. Thus, they are doomed to perish. The world does not know what to do. God’s providence of salvation is for humankind to return to its original state, and therefore may be termed “restoration”. Humankind became sick and thus must go back to the original world through being cured. How can we restore our lineal relationship with God? Hence, He cannot abandon these people who are doomed to perish. (2000.3.3)

What are true parents? Centered on the realms of God’s love, life, lineage, and conscience, everything is harmonized in unity. This is such a position in which true parents can settle. If a sprout grows from there and the branches reach out to the world, it will all be connected to the nation, world, and cosmos. That position does not shift.

Since God is absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal, the standard

to settle must also be absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal. Through what will this happen? It will not be through political power, some expedience, or force. If one invests true love, living for the sake of others, then it becomes more valuable.

When you invest yourselves in others with a heart of true love, that investment is never lost, but will actually yield an output greater than your input. Why? The universe is like that. Such phenomena attract the attention of the universe like a magnet. True love also has that effect. As for a magnet, if there is a metallic object close by, doesn't its magnetic force depend on its iron content? It is the same: true love attracts the universe. (317-269, 2000.2.28)

Since lineal identity is necessary, humankind cannot help but follow God's realm of heart. That is not possible if the root and the trunk are different. However, the buds must come from the same root and trunk. The incredible matter of the absolute lineal conversion takes place there. That cannot be accomplished through one's own efforts alone – there first must be True Parents. (172-55, 1988.1.7)

Despite your diverse lineages and backgrounds, in order for you to resemble the True Parents, the great feat of engrafting must take place. You must all writhe and squirm to be engrafted. You yourselves must pay off your remaining debts of indemnity. What originated from the parental position must be

indemnified from there, which is why one must be engrafted to the True Parents. Since Adam was not able to become the true parent and instead became a false parent, God has been seeking to establish true parents until now. The bride and groom mentioned along with the marriage supper of the lamb at the Second Advent are those parents. (24-203, 1969.8.10)

You must all become completely different after the ceremony of the conversion of lineage. If the True Parents hadn't come, would this have been possible? After the creation of the universe, how difficult was this path? Even just the appearance of the True Parents is a thing to be grateful for; yet receiving the Blessing from them is even more amazing. This tradition is one of lineage, which has planted true love, true life, and true lineage. You must always be mindful of this. (216-36, 1991.3.3)

Who is to convert the lineage? This is not something anyone can do simply, without knowing what needs changing. You must understand that I went the tearful way of the cross in order to do this. Since there was such a standard, you were able to inherit a new tradition called the Blessing through no merit of your own. In establishing a realm of victory of the conversion, there was God's effort of thousands of years and my life of substantial suffering. The position based on such a foundation is the very place you are now standing in. Blessing means cutting off the evil lineage

and being engrafted onto the new one; thereby, the lineage is changed. (35 -178, 1970.10.13)

What is the significance of a Blessed Family? Satan cannot dominate it. When you absolutely believe in the True Parents and that you belong to them, whatever your nationality, then Satan cannot invade your family. Why is that? It is because you are connected to the True Parents' realm of heart, in which the lineage has been changed. (149-53, 1986.11.2)

You all originated from the wrong starting point, which is why you must return there. You must go back, but where? To the original point. Since you originated from false parents, you must return and start all over again with the True Parents. How serious this is! You must inherit God's love, life, and lineage anew. Thus, at the time of your Blessing, didn't you undergo the ceremony of the conversion of lineage? You must believe in it more than you believe in your life. Do not regard it as an ordinary ritual just because it is one of the ceremonies of the Unification Church. This is the same as an injection that brings the dead back to life. It is an antidote shot! (216-107, 1991.3.9)

#### 2.3.4. Final goal: realizing the ideal of the true family

True love is most sacred and precious to people. It does not arise if you are by yourself or self-centered. True love is manifested when you seek to attain oneness with others by living for

them through giving endlessly without remembering what you have given. By such means, true love can embrace everything. It cannot be the possession of just one individual. After it is inherited, it belongs to the individual as well as to all people and the universe.

God desires to fulfill true love together with humankind. He wants to share the delights of true love and happiness eternally with his children, humankind – the highest and most precious creation of all in the world of heart. (294-63, 1998.6.11)

If true love were perfected in the human world, what problems could there be politically, economically, culturally, and environmentally? In a world of true love, there is no problem that cannot be solved. It is a world filled with delight and the ideal, in which freedom, peace, and happiness spread infinitely and eternally. The difficult issues which humankind is facing today can only be solved fundamentally through true love. (294-65, 1998.6.11)

The true family of true love is the origin of God's purpose of creation and the desire of humankind at the same time. Only through a true character of true love which can be created in such a true family can the true society, nation, and world be perfected and all the creative ideals of the environment realized. I have always been emphasizing the true family heaven; if that is achieved, then God's Kingdom on earth would be accomplished. A character of true love

which has been perfected in a true family heaven will be expanded to the society, nation, and world; it will not compromise with injustice, but will be embodied by a true person who will attain harmony and unity through a true family always living for the sake of others. (294-65, 1998.6.11)

God's ideal intended through the ancestors of humankind was to create an ideal family by bringing together a man and a woman. Thus, the center of an ideal family is neither of them. A family is a unit consisting of parents and children formed through the union of husband and wife, but the center of that unit is none other than God's love. We can conclude that God's will was to perfect a family centered on His love. (Blessing - 298)

The family is the starting point from which God's ideal can be realized and for manifesting human happiness. It is a position where all human work ends and where God perfects everything. Why is the family good? That is because it can become a base of free activity centering on true parental love. (Blessed Family - 930)

In a family, there must always be parents, spouses and children; only thus can it become the base of happiness. There is no doubt that God's purpose in seeking humankind must also be for the sake of His own happiness. That being so, in order for God to establish the base of His happiness, there can be no such ideal in a position separate from human-

kind. That point of oneness can only be obtained through relating with human beings. Just as we are happy in a situation where all our emotional needs are fulfilled within our families, God would also be happy in such a situation. (32-197, 1970.7.15)

True love is vertical in a parent-child relationship, true conjugal love is lateral, true fraternal love is in a position of front and rear, and God wished for the ideal of true love to be spherical. In short, vertically we have upper and lower, laterally left and right, and for front and rear there are anterior and posterior, and unity can be accomplished by connecting all these at the central point of that sphere. When the four realms of filial, fraternal, conjugal, and parental heart attain perfect oneness, that is, when people marry and unite in their first love centered on God, that position becomes the center and the point bearing the fruit of all perfection.

As such, marriage consolidates the virtues of heaven, earth, and humanity, and perfects vertical and horizontal unity in all directions. It is where the ideals of true children, siblings, spouses, parents, and true love are perfected. (259-42, 1994.3.27)

Where is the center of the universe? It is in the family. Where is the base in which true love can settle? It is the family that you are living in. Therefore, the original family holds sway over universal love, experiencing the aspects of universal protection and expanding the realm of universal love; it must transcend itself



to go the way of patriots loving their nation and then proceed to transcend the race and the nation by loving the world. Those who truly love their families are called devoted sons and daughters, and if those who love their nation devotedly are called patriots, then what are people who love humanity sacrificially called? They can only be called saints. (Blessed Family - 924)

Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have established an ideal family and tribe, and their descendants would have formed a race and nation within the realm of God's love, and these

would have expanded and accomplished an ideal world in which Adam's ideals would also be realized. Just as the root, trunk, and leaves of a tree are connected as one living body, human beings centering on love, attending God as their Father above, and attending each other as siblings below, making them into one living body, turn themselves into beings of love and establish an eternal and ideal God-centered world. This was indeed the worldview of God's will.

People living in such a world do not require salvation or the Messiah because they are God's good sons and daughters. (110-213, 1980.11.18)